This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

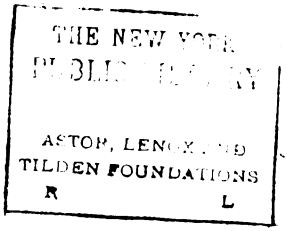
+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS
R L


THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS
R
L

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS
R L

London, 1830.

THE

MODERN TRAVELLER.

A

POPULAR DESCRIPTION,

GEOGRAPHICAL, HISTORICAL AND TOPOGRAPHICAL,

OF THE

VARIOUS COUNTRIES OF THE GLOBE.

VOL. IV.

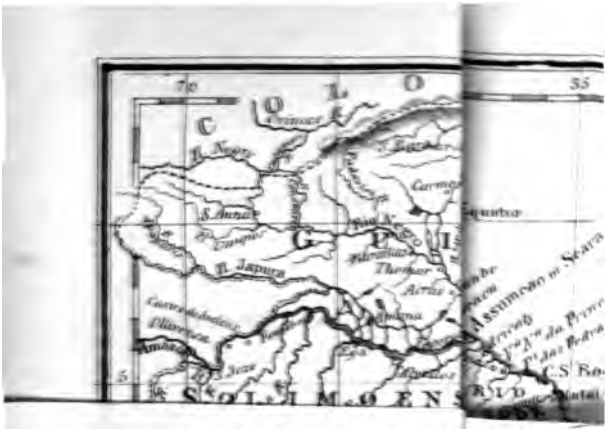
BRAZIL AND BUENOS AYRES.

VOL. 1.

BOSTON:
WELLS & LILLY, COURT-STREET,
AND THOMAS WARDLE, PHILADELPHIA.
1830.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
758244 A
ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS
R 1935 L

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
758244 A
ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS
R 1935 L


70
55
C
O
L
O
Primeira
R. Negro
S. Anna
R. Japura
Thomar
Alvellos
Olivença
Ega
Tabatinga
Carmo
Aguatuba
Assumpção
Thomar
Arrias
Andeira
Tapuyas
Tapuyas
Tapuyas

A

POPULAR DESCRIPTION,

GEOGRAPHICAL, HISTORICAL AND TOPOGRAPHICAL,

OF

BRAZIL AND BUENOS AYRES.

VOL. I.

BOSTON:
WELLS & LILLY, COURT-STREET,
AND THOMAS WARDLE, PHILADELPHIA.
.....
1830.

ADVERTISEMENT.

The following works have supplied our materials for the description of Brazil and Buenos Ayres.

Southey's History of Brazil. 3 vols. 4to. 1817-22.

Henderson's History of the Brazil. 4to. 1821.

Luccock's Notes on Rio de Janeiro and Southern Brazil. 4to. 1820.

Maria Graham's Journal of a Voyage to Brazil. 4to. 1824.

Voyage au Brésil. Par S. A. S. Maximilian, Prince de Wied Neuwied. Traduit par J. B. B. Eyries. 3 vols. 8vo. Paris, 1822.

Travels of Prince Maximilian, &c. Part I. 4to. 1820.

Mawe's Travels in Brazil. (2d ed.) 8vo.

Lindley's Authentic Narrative, &c. 8vo. 1808.

Koster's Travels in Brazil. 2 vols. 8vo. (2d ed.) 1817.

Travels in Brazil. By Drs Von Spix and Von Martius. 2 vols. 8vo. 1824.

De l'Empire du Brésil. Par M. A. la Beaumelle, 8vo. Paris, 1823.

L'Independence de l'Empire du Brésil. Par M. A. de Beauchamp, Paris, 1824.

Picturesque Illustrations of Buenos Ayres and Monte Video. By E. E. Vidal, Esq. 4to. 1820.

Wilcocke's History of Buenos Ayres, 8vo. 1807.

Brackenridge's Voyage to South America, 2 vols. 8vo. 1820.

Major Gillespie's Gleanings and Remarks during many Months' residence at Buenos Ayres, 8vo. 1819.

Reports on the Present State of the United Provinces of South America, by Messrs Rodney and Graham, 8vo. 1819.

CONTENTS OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

	Page.
Boundaries of Russia	1
State of the Country previously to 1689	2
History of Russia	3
Affairs of the minority of the King	3
Declaration of the National Independence	7
Natural History and productions	9
Population	12
Provinces. Divisions	13
Provinces of Kur in Asiatic	19
City of Kur in Asiatic	19
Inhabitants of Kur	23
Environs of Kur	23
Town. Forts of Russian Crimea	25
Bay of Kur	25
Town Kur in Province Novgorod	26
Inscriptions of a Byzantine Prince	29
Town Kur in Country Gothia	25
Town Kur in Caucasian Government	29
Coast in the Prince	31
Provinces of Russian Prince	34
City of Russian Prince	35
Town Russian in Russian Prince	35
Town Kur in Russian Prince	36
Most remote of Languages	36

From mines of Ypanema
From Ypanema to Minas Geraes
Province of Santa Catharina
Province of Rio Grande do Sul
St Pedro
Monte Video
Province of Parana
Province of Uruguay

DIRECTIONS FOR PLACING THE PLATES

Vol. I. *Map of Brazil* . . . *to face the*
Brazilian Hunters . . *to face page*
Throwing the Lasso . . .
Vol. II. *View on the River Dour* . . .
Opening of a new Route . . .
Returnadors on a Journey . . .
Market Place, Buenos Ayres . .
Travelling Post . . . . .

[illegible]

comprehends the whole of the Portuguese colonies in South America, which, having been incorporated into a kingdom in December 1815, have since declared their independence under the government of the Prince Royal of Portugal, now Emperor of Brazil. A little more than three centuries ago, the existence of this vast country was unknown; and for thirty years after its accidental discovery, it was almost totally neglected by the Portuguese, who were not in the least degree aware of the importance of the acquisition. The gold and diamond mines were not discovered till nearly two hundred years after the country had been in their possession. In 1699, some enterprising individuals first began to work several gold mines in the back settlements. The attention of the government being attracted by this circumstance, it was ordained that, on the discovery of a mine, immediate notice should be given to the public authorities, and that a fifth of the produce should go to the king. Other mines were soon discovered; and from the year 1728 to 1734, the king's fifth amounted, on the average, to 480,000*l.* yearly, the whole annual produce amounting to upwards of two millions sterling. It then began to diminish, till the whole produce sank to about one-half, and the royal fifth to 257,500*l.*, which was raised, however, by a duty of 2 per cent on its exportation, and the seignorage on the coinage, to 353,500*l.* The diamond mines were first discovered about thirty years after. These, too, paid a fifth to the government, which has amounted, on the average, to 148,500*l.* In order to secure to the crown the ample revenues arising from these sources, it was found necessary to carry to the most oppressive and injurious extent the restrictions of the colonial system. Not only diamonds, but ivory, brazil-wood, and all ship-timber, tobacco, snuff, and gunpowder, were royal monopolies. The periodical fleets were limited to Lisbon and Oporto in the mother country, and to Pernambuco, St Salvador,

Paraiba, and Rio Janeiro, in Brazil. All goods imported from the mother country, paid a duty of 12 per cent. The system of exclusive companies prevailed in connexion with the most absurd regulations. The taxes, alike impolitic and oppressive, were, in many parts, farmed out to the highest bidders. Salt, as well as iron, was taxed 100 per cent. Every article passing into the gold or diamond districts, paid a duty of two-pence per lb. In passing ferries, goods paid not according to their value, but their weight. Such was the state of things previously to the emigration of the Court of Lisbon in 1808. British vessels, on their way to the East Indies, or to the South Seas, had been accustomed to touch at the friendly ports of Brazil, and they had often found means to introduce European commodities at a cheaper rate than they could be sent from Portugal; but very strict measures had recently been adopted for preventing this irregularity. No trade of any kind was allowed between the natives and the British; although, as the persons employed to enforce this regulation not unfrequently found it their interest to violate it, the intercourse could not be entirely stopped. Under these circumstances, the population of the Brazilian colonies could not be expected greatly to increase. It is almost impossible to obtain any authentic or accurate information on this point. According to the author of the "Etat Pr sent du Portugal," Brazil contained, about the beginning of the present century, 12 cities, 66 towns, and 430,000 inhabitants, of whom more than one-sixth were Portuguese. Sir George Staunton, in his account of the Embassy to China, estimates the whites at about 200, 000, and the black population at 600,000. 20,000 slaves were then annually imported, of whom about 5000 were sold at Rio. Many of the slaves were the property of the crown, about 10,000 being employed in the diamond mines. Others were attached to convents: the Benedictines alone had 1000 upon

their plantations. M. de Beauchamp carries the estimate of the population in 1817, to 800,000 Europeans, 1,500,000 negroes, and from 6 to 900,000 civilized Indians. This has been considered as an exaggeration. Taking the population at three millions, this would give only an individual for every square mile of the immense area contained within the empire; the greater part of which still consists of almost impenetrable forests or uninhabitable deserts. According to the last census, however, the population had already risen, in consequence chiefly of the tide of emigration being directed to Brazil, to nearly four millions, of whom about one-half are supposed to be free: viz. 843,000 whites, 426,000 mulattoes, 260,000 Indians, and 160,000 free blacks: the remainder consist of about two millions of slaves. The revenue, which, in 1818, amounted to little more than fourteen millions of francs, or between 6 and 700,000*l*., had risen, in 1820, to sixty-one millions of francs, in 1823, to upwards of ninety-four millions, or about 4,000,000*l*. sterling, and is rapidly augmenting.

The moral condition of the people, up to the era of the arrival of the Prince Regent of Portugal, was as deplorably vicious and degraded, as their political circumstances were depressed and unfavourable. All that is sublime in inanimate nature, in contrast with all that is disgusting in human nature, was comprised in the aspect and character of this portion of the New World. "The cities for which Abraham interceded, Cyprus, Carthage, Crete, and Sparta, had joined," says a modern traveller, "at the period when my acquaintance with the country began, to form the social order of Rio Janeiro." Nor were the manners of the capital marked by much deeper turpitude than those of the other cities. "Depravity," he adds, "was not there redeemed by any national qualities of a lofty, nor even of a showy kind. It was not in general thought necessary to maintain that shadow of virtue,

hypocrisy. Vices which elsewhere men are the most careful to hide, were seen stalking abroad as publicly and unblushingly as the most abandoned could desire. Not negroes and the populace alone contaminated them with apathy: the moral taste and feeling of persons of a higher cast partook so much of the common taint, that when we mentioned with horror the words of crimes, which we were obliged to witness, they often advanced something in way of defence, and really appeared as much surprised at our mode of thinking, as if we had broached a new religion, or foisted into the old one some scrupulous fancies. The life of an undistinguished individual was not worth two dollars: for a smaller sum, any coward could hire a bravo to take it away." The most profound ignorance and the extreme of filthiness in the habits of the people, completed the revolting picture. The ceremonies of the Roman catholic religion, were, in the meanwhile duly celebrated, and superstition decked itself, as in the European towns, with the grossest voluptuousness. The monks, "a ignorant and debauched crew," at once smugglers and hypocrites, swarmed in every street. Such was, and to a certain extent, such is, Brazil,—that land of wonders where rivers roll over beds of gold, where the rocks grow with topazes, and the sands sparkle with diamonds,—where nature assumes her richest dress beneath the blaze of tropical sun, and birds of the gaudiest plumage vie with the splendid efflorescence of the forests they inhabit. Previously, however, to our taking a more particular survey of the country, our readers will claim a more detailed account of the

HISTORY OF BRAZIL

The last year of the fifteenth century was signalized by the discovery of the southern portion of the

their plantations. M. de Beauchamp carries the estimate of the population in 1806, to 800,000 Europeans, 1,500,000 negroes, and from 8 to 900,000 civilized Indians. This has been considered as an exaggeration. Taking the population at three millions, this would give only an individual for every square mile of the immense area comprised within the empire; the greater part of which still consists of almost impenetrable forests or uninhabitable deserts. According to the last census, however, the population had already risen, in consequence chiefly of the tide of emigration being directed to Brazil, to nearly four millions, of whom about one-half are supposed to be free: viz. 343,000 whites, 426,000 mulattoes, 260,000 Indians, and 160,000 free blacks: the remainder consist of about two millions of slaves. The revenue, which, in 1818, amounted to little more than fourteen millions of francs, or between 6 and 700,000*l*., had risen, in 1820, to sixty-one millions of francs, in 1823, to upwards of ninety-four millions, or about 4,000,000*l*. sterling, and is rapidly augmenting.

The moral condition of the people, up to the era of the arrival of the Prince Regent of Portugal, was as deplorably vicious and degraded, as their political circumstances were depressed and unfavourable. All that is sublime in inanimate nature, in contrast with all that is disgusting in human nature, was comprised in the aspect and character of this portion of the New World. "The cities for which Abraham interceded, Cyprus, Carthage, Crete, and Sparta, had joined," says a modern traveller, "at the period when my acquaintance with the country began, to form the social order of Rio Janeiro." Nor were the manners of the capital marked by much deeper turpitude than those of the other cities. "Depravity," he adds, "was not there redeemed by any national qualities of a solid, nor even of a showy kind. It was not in general thought necessary to maintain that shadow of virtue,

hypocrisy. Vices which elsewhere men are the most careful to hide, were seen stalking abroad as publicly and unblushingly as the most abandoned could desire. Not negroes and the populace alone contemplated them with apathy: the moral taste and feeling of persons of a higher cast partook so much of the common taint, that when we mentioned with horror the worst of crimes, which we were obliged to witness, they often advanced something by way of defence, and really appeared as much surprised at our mode of thinking, as if we had broached a new religion, or foisted into the old one some scrupulous fancies. The life of an undistinguished individual was not worth two dollars: for a smaller sum, any coward could hire a bravo to take it away." The most profound ignorance and the extreme of filthiness in the habits of the people, completed the revolting picture. The ceremonies of the Roman catholic religion were in the meanwhile duly celebrated, and superstition blended itself, as in the European towns, with the grossest voluptuousness. The monks, "an ignorant and debauched crew," at once sluggards and libertines, swarmed in every street. Such was, and, to a certain extent, such is, Brazil,—that land of wonders, whose rivers roll over beds of gold, where the rocks glow with topazes, and the sands sparkle with diamonds,—where nature assumes her richest dress beneath the blaze of tropical sun, and birds of the gaudiest plumage vie with the splendid efflorescence of the forests they inhabit. Previously, however, to our taking a more particular survey of the country, our readers will claim a more detailed account of the

HISTORY OF BRAZIL.

The last year of the fifteenth century was signalized by the discovery of the southern portion of the

American continent. Vicente Yanez Pinzon, a native of Paloz, on the coast of Murcia, and one of the companions of Columbus in his first voyage, was the first Spaniard who ventured to cross the equinoctial line. He stood boldly towards the south, and on the 26th of January, 1500, he saw land, to which he gave the name of Cape Consolation. This was that point of the coast of Brazil, about twenty miles to the south of Pernambuco, which is now called Cape St Augustine. Here he landed, cut the names of the ships and the date of the year upon some trees and rocks, and took possession of the country for the crown of Castile, but made no settlement. Continuing along the coast, he discovered the mouth of the river Maranham, or river of the Amazons. In common, however, with all preceding navigators, he is said to have adopted the erroneous theory of Columbus, and to have believed that these newly discovered countries were part of the vast continent of India.* Having lost three of his ships on the voyage, and several of his men having been killed in a rencount:r with the natives,† he was obliged to content himself with hav-

* Hence the name of *West Indies* was given to this country, and that of *Indian*, to its inhabitants.—See *Robertson's America*, b. ii.

† "A party of natives were assembled upon a hill near the shore, and one of the Spaniards, who was well armed, advanced singly toward them. They came to meet him, suspecting, and at the same time, intending evil. The Spaniard made all the friendly signs he could devise, and threw to them a hawk's-bell, for which they threw down something which was supposed to be a piece of gold; he stooped for it, and they sprung forward to seize him. This, however, was not so easy as they suspected; though neither a large nor a robust man, he defended himself with sword and shield to the admiration of his comrades, who hastened to his assistance, and succeeded in rescuing him, but with great loss. The savages, with their deadly archery, slew eight, wounded many more, and pursued them to their boats. Not satisfied with this success,

ing made these discoveries, and returned to Europe, carrying with him several drugs, some precious stones, and a large cargo of Brazil-wood.

While Pinzon was thus occupied, Portugal was fitting out a fleet, with much pomp and parade, in the Tagus,—not with the project of discovering any new territory, but for the purpose of following up the successful voyage of Vasco da Gama, who had just returned from the East, having ascertained the navigation to India by doubling the Cape of Good Hope. This second expedition accidentally discovered for Portugal, a wider and more important empire than had been ascertained by the first. Pedro Alvarez Cabral was appointed to the command of the fleet, which sailed from the Tagus on the 9th of March, 1500. In order to avoid the calms which prevail along the coast of Africa, Cabral stood out to sea, and kept so far to the westward, that, on the 25th of April, he found himself, to his surprise, upon the coast of an unknown country in the tenth degree beyond the line. The first land which he saw, was a high round mountain, with a range of hills to the south, and a low shore covered with wood. The mountain he called Mount Paschal, and to the country he gave the name of Terra de Vera Cruz, the Land of the True Cross. Cabral at first imagined the country which he had discovered, to be a large island; but, proceeding along the coast, he was led to believe that a country so extensive must form a

they attacked the boats. It was then that, being naked, they felt the edge of European swords. Put nothing deterred them; they rushed on like wild beasts, despising wounds and death; followed the boats even when they had put off, dived after them, and fairly won one of them, having slain its captain, and driven out the crew. Scarcely a man got off without a wound; and had the arrows of the natives been poisoned, scarcely one could have escaped."—*Southey's History of Brazil*, vol. i. p. 4.

part of some great continent. On Good Friday, the fleet anchored in a harbour, the commodious appearance of which tempted him to land; and on Easter day, the first Christian altar was set up on the soil of South America. The natives were alarmed, and fled to their hills; but the Portuguese, having secured two, presented them some mirrors, brass rings, and bells, which were found the most acceptable articles, and then allowed them to rejoin their countrymen. The fears of the natives being immediately dissipated by this friendly behaviour, they now flocked to the vessel with as much delight and confidence as they had before testified suspicion and aversion.* They approached singing and dancing, with all the uncouth gesticulations of savage joy, and an intercourse was immediately opened between them and the Portuguese. But first of all, after the example of Columbus, Cabral erected a wooden crucifix, before which the Portuguese prostrated themselves, and the natives followed their example; high mass was performed, to the delight of the Indians, and formal possession was taken of the country for the crown of Portugal. He called the harbour Porto Seguro.† Having despatched a small vessel to Lisbon with information of this important event, he sailed from Porto Seguro on the 2d of May, and proceeded on his voyage to India. "Columbus's discovery of the New World," remarks Dr Robertson, "was the effort of an active genius enlighted by science, guided by experience, and acting upon a regular plan, executed with no less courage than perseverance. But, from this adventure of the Portuguese, it appears that chance might have ac-

* They are described as the gentlest and most docile of all the Brazilian tribes. They were of a dark copper colour, entirely naked, their bodies painted with various colours, and armed with bows and arrows.

† Now called Cabralia. The name of Porto Seguro has been erroneously transferred to a place four leagues further southward.

complished that great design which it is now the pride of human reason to have formed and perfected. If the sagacity of Columbus had not conducted mankind to America, Cabral, by a fortunate accident, might have led them, a few years later, to the knowledge of that extensive continent."

When the tidings of the discovery reached Europe, Emmanuel, the king of Portugal, immediately fitted out three ships to explore the country, and invited Amerigo Vespucci from Seville to take the command of the expedition. They sailed about the middle of May in the ensuing year, and, after a very distressing voyage, arrived off the coast, where they succeeded in establishing a friendly intercourse with some tribes of the aborigines, notwithstanding that they soon ascertained them to be cannibals.* The savages expressed astonish-

* "They first arrived in latitude 5 deg. S. and on the day after, they saw a party of natives assembled on a hill. Two of the sailors volunteered to go on shore, and several days passed without their return. At length the Portuguese landed, sent a young man to meet the savages, and returned to their boats. The women came forward to meet him apparently as negotiators. They surrounded him, handling and examining him with evident curiosity and wonder. Presently there came down another woman from the hill, having a stake in her hand, with which she got behind him, and dealt him a blow that brought him to the ground. Immediately the others seized him by the feet, and dragged him away, and then men, rushing to the shore, discharged their arrows at the boats. The boats had grounded upon a sand bank: this unexpected attack dismayed the Portuguese; they thought rather of escape than of vengeance, till remembering at length that the best means of securing themselves was by displaying their power, they discharged four guns at the savages, who then fled to the hills. Meantime the women had dragged the body thither; they cut it in pieces, held up the mutilated limbs in mockery to the boats, broiled them over a huge fire which had been prepared as it seemed for that purpose, and with loud rejoicings devoured them in sight of the Portuguese, to whom they intimated by signs, that they had, in like manner, eaten their two countrymen. At this abominable sight, forty of the crew would

ment when informed that the Portuguese killed men, and did not eat them. The ships returned to Lisbon in 1502. In the spring of the ensuing year, Amerigo again set sail, with six caravels, for the purpose of prosecuting still further the examination of Vera Cruz; but four of the vessels were lost in consequence of the ignorance of their senior commander.* The other two reached a port which they called All Saints, where they remained five months on friendly terms with the natives, and then returned to Lisbon, laden with Brazil-wood, monkeys, and parrots, leaving behind them twenty-four men, who had been saved from the wreck of the commander's vessel. Thus was formed the first settlement in this country.

The Brazil-wood had now acquired such repute in Europe, that the holy name of Vera Cruz, which Cabral had given to the country, soon became lost in the denomination which it universally received, of the Brazil, or the Brazil wood country. Other navigators were now sent to explore the coasts, and settlements were formed in different parts. But, as the country was not known to abound with the precious metals, or to afford any article of commerce worthy of the attention of a government whose coffers were overflowing with the riches of Africa and the East, it was in a short time abandoned altogether to the speculations of private adventurers. A contract was granted for the Brazil-wood, and the colony began to be frequently visited by the caravels of the contractors, while persons were found willing to reside there as their agents. But the slender profits which could be realised by this article of commerce, (the only one, except parrots, which

have landed to revenge their comrades, but they were not permitted to make the attempt."—*Southey's History of Brazil*, vol. i. p. 24.

* Supposed to have been D. Gonsalo Coelho.

Brazil at this time yielded,) were an inadequate compensation for the formidable dangers to which the settlers were exposed. The harmony and good understanding which marked the first interviews between the natives and the Portuguese, were not of long continuance. The former found little reason to congratulate themselves on these new neighbours, and passing, with the impetuosity of savage minds, from the extreme of a blind attachment to that of hatred and vengeance,—not, however, it may be suspected, without provocation,—they commenced a furious warfare on the European settlements. The Portuguese were not always victorious, and for those who fell into the hands of the enemy, a fate was reserved at which humanity shudders. Such occurrences soon put an end to voluntary emigration to Brazil. All who pursued the prizes of wealth and ambition, crowded to the more splendid theatre of India, every region of which was then the scene of Portuguese triumphs; and Brazil seemed likely to revert to its original state of barbarism. At this crisis the government, whether from the wish to turn to some account an acquisition hitherto unprofitable, or from the inconvenient increase of convicts in the mother country, consequent on the recent establishment of the Inquisition, adopted the scheme of commuting the punishment of death for banishment to this colony, thus making it the Botany Bay of Portugal. The system was not very favourable to the moral respectability of the settlements; nor is it surprising that the savages soon lost all awe and veneration for those whom they had at first regarded as beings of a superior race. The new settlers, by whom the population of Brazil was gradually augmented, rendered desperate by their situation, if not already hardened by crime, were well fitted to contend with the dangers and difficulties that awaited them. In the bloody conflicts which ensued with the exasperated natives, they committed atrocities not perhaps

surpassed in enormity by those which attended the conquest of Mexico and Peru by the Spaniards. On storming a village, it is stated to have been their regular practice, to massacre the old men and children, and to carry the rest into slavery.

In the mean time, Amerigo Vespucci had returned to the service of the king of Castile, who, deeming himself entitled to take possession of that part of the coast which this great navigator had surveyed while under the Portuguese flag, but which did not appear to be appropriated, sent out Don Juan de Solis, in 1509, on a new voyage of discovery, accompanied with the celebrated pilot, Vicente Yanez Pinzon. The king of Portugal remonstrated against this proceeding as an intrusion upon his share of the division of undiscovered countries, which the infamous Pope Alexander VI. had artfully assigned to the two nations. That pontiff had, by virtue of his pretended dominion over all the kingdoms of the earth, granted to Ferdinand and Isabella, in full right, all the countries inhabited by infidels, which they had discovered or should discover; while on the crown of Castile, he had conferred vast regions with the situation of which he was unacquainted. To prevent these grants from clashing, he appointed that an imaginary line from pole to pole, a hundred leagues to the westward of the Azores, should serve as a limit between them; in the plenitude of his power bestowing all to the east of this line upon the Portuguese, and all to the west of it upon the Spaniards. The remonstrance of the court of Lisbon appears to have had some effect; for, on the return of De Solis and Pinzon in consequence of some disputes which had arisen between them on the voyage, the intention of the king of Castile was relinquished. It was not till seven years afterwards that De Solis was sent on a second voyage; and then it was with the avowed purpose of ascertain-

ing the communication with the Pacific Ocean by the westward, which had been discovered by the unfortunate Balboa two years before. On this voyage, De Solis, who was acknowledged to be one of the most skilful navigators living, standing along the coast of Brazil, came to the fine harbour now called Rio de Janeiro. He proceeded southward to a spacious bay, which he supposed to be the entrance into a strait that communicated with the Indian ocean; but, upon advancing further, he found it to be the estuary of the Rio de la Plata. With this important discovery, the career of this enterprising navigator was doomed to terminate. In endeavouring to make a descent on the coast, De Solis and several of his crew were slain by the natives, who, in sight of the ships, cut their bodies in pieces, roasted, and devoured them.* Discouraged by the loss of their commander, the surviving Spaniards set sail for Europe, without aiming at any further discovery. The king of Portugal claimed their cargoes, and remonstrated so effectually against the interference of Spain, that when Magalhaens, three years afterwards, touched at Rio de Janeiro, he would purchase nothing of the natives but provisions.

Meanwhile the French had formed settlements on the northern part of the coast of Brazil; and when the Portuguese commander, Christovam Jacques, en-

* "The natives invited him to shore, and he landed with a boat's crew, intending to catch one of them, and carry him to Spain. Their intention was worse than his, and better executed. They had stationed a party in ambush, who rose suddenly upon the crew, seized the boat, broke it to pieces in an instant, and slew every man with clubs: then they took the bodies upon their shoulders, carried them to a spot which was out of the reach of the Spaniards, but within sight, and there dismembered, roasted, and devoured them. The scene of this tragedy was on the north shore, between Monte Video and Maldonado, near a rivulet, which still bears the name of Solis."—*Southey's History of Brazil*, vol. i p. 35.

tered the bay which he named All Saints.* he found there two French ships laden with Brazil-wood, which he engaged, and, after a spirited defence destroyed.

The first settler in Bahia was Diogo Alvarez, whose history, as detailed by Mr Southey, is romantically interesting.

"He was a native of Viana, young and of noble family, who, with that spirit of enterprise which was then common among his countrymen, embarked to seek his fortune in strange countries. He was wrecked upon the shoals on the north of the bar of Bahia. Part of the crew were lost, others escaped that mode of death to suffer one more dreadful: the natives seized and ate them. Diogo saw that there was no other possible chance of saving his life, than by making himself as useful as possible to these cannibals. He therefore exerted himself in recovering things from the wreck, and by such exertions succeeded in conciliating their favour. Among others things, he was fortunate enough to get on shore some barrels of powder and a musket, which he put in order at his first leisure, after his masters were returned to their village: and one day, when the opportunity was favourable, brought down a bird before them. The women and children shrieked Caramuru! Caramuru! which signified a man of fire: and they cried out that he would destroy them: but he told the men, whose astonishment had less of fear mingled with it, that he would go with them to war, and kill their enemies. Caramuru was the name which from thence-forward he was known by. They marched against the Tapuyas: the fame of this dreadful engine went before them, and the Tapuyas fled. From a slave, Caramuru became a sovereign: the chiefs of the savages thought themselves happy, if he

* Where Bahia or St Salvador now stands. The port discovered and named All Saints by Vespucci, is supposed by some to be further northward.

would accept their daughters to be his wives. He fixed his abode upon the spot where Villa Velha was afterwards erected, and soon saw as numerous a progeny as an old patriarch's rising round him. The best families in Bahia trace their origin to him.

"At length a French vessel came into this bay, and Diogo resolved to take that opportunity of once more seeing his native country. He loaded her with brazil, and embarked with his favourite wife, Paraguaza—the Great River. The other wives could not bear this abandonment, though it was only to be for a time; some of them swam after the ship, in hopes of being taken on board, and one followed it so far, that before she could reach the shore again, her strength failed, and she sunk. They were received with signal honour at the court of France. Paraguaza was baptised by the name of Catharina Alvarez, after the queen of Portugal, and the king and queen were her sponsors. Her marriage was then celebrated. Diogo would fain have proceeded to Portugal, but the French would not permit him to go there: the honours which they had shewn him were not to be gratuitous, and they meant to make him of use to them in his own dominions. By means, however, of Pedro Fernandez Sardinha, (then a young man, who had just compleated his studies in Paris, and afterwards the first bishop of Brazil,) he sent the information to Joam III., which he was not permitted to carry, and exhorted the king to colonise the delightful province in which his own lot had been so strangely cast. After some time, he covenanted with a wealthy merchant to take him back, and leave him the artillery and ammunition of two ships, with store of such things as were useful for traffic with the natives, in return for which he undertook to load both vessels with brazil. The bargain was fairly performed, and Diogo having returned to his territories, fortified his little capital."*

* Southey's History of Brazil, vol. i. p. 38.

* "Martin Affonso de Sousa, on his return to Portugal, was appointed governor of India, and sailed from the Tagus with a powerful armament. He began his career of conquest by the reduction of Diu, which he garrisoned with a thousand men. Proceeding thence to the coast of Canara, he possessed himself of Bacanor, Onor, Mangalor, and Barcelor, which he garrisoned with a thousand men each. He then sailed to the island of Ceylon, and built a fort at Columbo, which he garrisoned with four hundred men. He then proceeded to the coast of Coromandel, and built a fort at Negapatam, which he garrisoned with two hundred men. He then proceeded to the coast of Malabar, and built a fort at Cochin

[illegible] accommodation will be [illegible] he has not ever set foot in the New World. Among the was Father Manoel da Nobrega, a man whose [illegible] merits it be said of the Brazilians it records [illegible] honour.*

The appointment of the governor-general has [illegible] by some writers ascribed to a memorial addressed [illegible] from the remissness now of the Portuguese government of the missionaries of the society.† [illegible] great numbers of Jews had found shelter in the possessions of Portugal in the Indies, and more especially in Brazil. These, however, they were not entirely [illegible], many of them being known as men of probity, retained the offices of importance to merchants with whom they had long previously transacted business. By such assistance they were enabled to procure sugar-canes from the islands of Madeira, and [illegible] plantations. Sugar, which till then had been used only in medicine, became an article of luxury, and the increasing demand for it proved highly favourable to the colonists, enabling them to extend their plantations. The court of Lisbon began to be sensible that a colony might be formed in the rich country, without producing either gold or silver; and hence the appointment of a governor-general was determined upon. It must, however, be observed, that the appointment of De Souza in 1549, was not

* Nobrega was the contemporary of St Francis Xavier, [illegible] his zeal in disinterested exertions for the good of his fellow creatures. He has been termed the Apostle of Brazil. [illegible] was of a noble Portuguese family, but, disgusted at an [illegible] collegiate honour, to which he thought he had a better [illegible] than the successful candidate, he had renounced the world; [illegible] of disgust, little aware that that step would lead to his [illegible] ing a more prominent and important part than, with [illegible] ents and fair prospects, would otherwise have been [illegible] reach.

† See Rees's Cyclopedia; and Pinkerton's [illegible] Brazil.

were most formidable; but their zeal and assiduity rose with the difficulty of the enterprise, and the most salutary effects resulted from their exertions. They began by instructing the children of the natives, teaching them the Portuguese language; and thus, while they fitted them to become interpreters, they acquired theirs.* The greatest obstacle they had to surmount, arose from the cannibal propensities of the natives. In feasts of this horrid description, their pride, their religion, their greatest luxury, were all implicated. The missionaries resolved to conquer this diabolical habit; but, though they succeeded in putting down drunkenness, in healing inveterate feuds, in making a man content with one wife, the delight of feasting on the flesh of their enemies was too great to be relinquished; this propensity they could not overcome.† In these laudable exertions, the Jesuits were,

* "Nobrega had a school near the city, where he instructed the native children, the orphans from Portugal, and the mestizos or mixed breed, here called Mamalucos. Reading, writing, and arithmetic were taught them: they were trained to assist at mass, and to sing the church service, and were frequently led in procession through the town. This had a great effect, for the natives were passionately fond of music—so passionately, that Nobrega began to hope the fable of Orpheus was a type of his mission, and that by songs he was to convert the Pagans of Brazil. He usually took with him four or five of these little choristers on his preaching expeditions: when they approached an inhabited place, one carried the crucifix before them, and they entered singing the litany. The savages, like snakes, were won by the voice of the charmer: they received him joyfully, and when he departed with the same ceremony, the children followed the music. He set the catechism, creed, and ordinary prayers to sol, fa; and the pleasures of learning to sing was such a temptation, that the little Tupis sometimes ran away from their parents to put themselves under the care of the Jesuits."—*Southey's Hist. of Brazil*, vol. i. p. 267.

† "A Jesuit one day found a Brazilian woman in extreme old age, and almost at the point of death Having catechised

however, every where opposed by the priests who had already settled in the country. Their interests were at stake; for the missionaries performed all the ceremonies of religion gratuitously, from which the priests derived their support. They had maintained that it was lawful to enslave the Indians, because they were beasts, although their own manners were not less dissolute than those of the savages: and they hated the Jesuits, who sought to fal-ify their representation by instructing and humanising the natives

The first Brazilian bishop was appointed in 1552. In the following year, Thome de Souza, having now

her, instructed her, as he conceived, in the nature of Christianity, and completely taken care of her soul, he began to inquire whether there was any kind of food which she could take? 'Grandam,' said he, 'if I were to get you a little sugar now, or a mouthful of some of our nice things which we bring from beyond sea, do you think you could eat it?' 'Ah, my grandson,' said the old convert, 'my stomach goes against every thing. There is but one thing which I fancy I could touch. If I had the little hand of a little tender Tapuya boy, I think I could pick the little bones: but woe is me, there is no body to go out and shoot one for me!' "—*Southey's History of Brazil*, vol. i. p. 232.

"One day, they heard the uproar and rejoicing of the savages at one of these sacrifices: they made way into the area just when the prisoner had been felled, and the old women were dragging his body to the fire. They forced the body from them, and in the presence of the whole clan, who stood astonished at their courage, carried it off. The women soon roused the warriors to revenge this insult, and by the time the fathers had secretly interred the corpse, the savages were in search of them. The governor received timely intelligence, and sent in haste to call the Jesuits from the mud hovel which they inhabited, upon the spot whereon their magnificent college was afterwards erected. When the savages had searched here in vain, they were on the point of attacking the city; the governor was obliged to call out his whole force, and partly by the display of fire-arms, and partly by fair words, he induced them to retire."—*Southey's Hist. of Brazil*, vol. i. p. 263.

been governor-general for four years, was recalled at his own request. His successor, D. Duarte da Costa, was accompanied to the new world by Anchieta and all other Jesuits, and a college was soon afterwards established in the plains of Piratininga, as St. Paul's, a secluded and beautiful spot about ten leagues from the sea, and thirteen from St. Vincente.* A misunderstanding arising between the bishop and the new governor, the former embarked for Portugal with the intention of stating his grievance to the king, but was wrecked on the coast, and, together with a hundred Europeans, was made prisoner by the Caheetes. The revenge taken by the Portuguese was horrible. The Caheetes were condemned with all their posterity to perpetual slavery, they were hunted, slaughtered, and almost exterminated.

Da Costa was replaced, in 1558, by Mem da Sa, a man of enlightened mind and humane principles,

* A century afterwards, when a road had been made in the best direction, Vasconcellos thus describes it: "The greatest part of the way you have not to travel but to get on with hands and feet by the roots of trees, and the winding steps and precipices, that I confess, the first time I went there, my flesh trembled when I looked down. The depth of the valleys is tremendous, and the number of mountains, one above another, seem to have no hope of reaching the end:—when you fancy you are at the summit of one, you find yourself at the foot of another of no less magnitude; and this is the certain and chosen way. That is, that few care to take the labour of the ascent is never perused, for when I seated myself upon one of these rocks, and cast my eyes below, it seemed as though I were looking down from the heaven of the moon, and that the whole globe of earth lay beneath my feet,—a sight of rare beauty, for the diversity of prospect both of sea and land, plains, forests and innumerable marks, all various and beyond measure delightful. This ascent, broken with shelves of level, continues till you reach the plains of Piratininga, in the second region of the air, where it is so thin, that it seems as if they who newly arrive there could never breathe their fill."

a man high in the French naval service, had tal possession of one of the islands in the bay of Rio Janeiro, for the avowed purpose of founding there asylum for the persecuted Hugonots of France.] this specious project he had obtained the powe patronage of Admiral de Coligny, and by this me had secured a number of respectable colonists.] French court was disposed to view with no sa satisfaction the plan of founding a colony after example of the Spaniards and Portuguese. Hav landed, he had begun to built a fort, which he cal Fort Coligny; and although the whole territory which he had gained possession, consisted of an isl about a mile in circumference, the continent was ready honoured with the name of Antarctic Fran On the return of the vessels to Europe for a fr cargo of Protestants, a considerable zeal was imr diately kindled for the establishment of the reform religion in these remote regions; and the Church Geneva took that interest in the project, that two m isters and fourteen students from that city determi to brave all the hardships of an unknown climate a new mode of life in the cause. They repaired the seat of Admiral de Coligny, near Chatillon l'Oing, where they were received with the high respect; and through the influence of the admi added to the uneasy situation of those of the reform faith in France, their numbers were soon swell new recruits continually presenting themselves as tl proceeded on their road to the coast. Their dep ture was hastened by an adventure of no agreea nature. At Harfleur, the catholic inhabitants, in gated by the most furious intolerance, rose in ar against them, and a desperate conflict ensued, in wh one of their best officers was killed, and the rest ow their safety to a precipitate retreat. On their passa they suffered from a violent storm; and when, af a tedious voyage, they arrived off the coast of Bra

they had a slight encounter with the Portuguese at Espiritu Santo. At length, they reached the settlement of their countrymen at Rio de Janeiro, where they were received at first with apparent cordiality. "But," says Mr Southey, "Villegagnon was a villain." When it suited his views, he threw off the mask, and those who had come to Antarctic France to enjoy liberty of conscience, found themselves brought under a worse yoke than that from which they had fled. "They therefore," continues Mr Southey, "demanded leave to return, and he gave written permission to the master of a ship to carry them to France. When they got on board, the vessel was found to be in such a state, that five of the party went again ashore, rather than put to sea in her. Jean de Lery was one of the others, who thought death better than this man's cruelty, and pursued their voyage. After having endured the utmost misery of famine, they reached Hennebonne.* Villegagnon had given them

* One of these unfortunate persons thus describes the sufferings they endured. "After having devoured," says he, "all the leather in our vessel, even to the covering of the trunks, we thought ourselves approaching to the last moment of our life; but necessity suggested to some one the idea of pursuing the rats and mice, and we had the greater hope of taking them easily, because, having no more crumbs, nor any thing to devour, they ran in great numbers, dying for hunger, through the vessel. We pursued them so carefully, and by so many kind of snares, that very few remained. Even in the night we sought them, with our eyes open, like rats. A rat was more valued than an ox on land. The price rose so high as four crowns. We boiled them in water, with all the intestines, which were eaten as well as the body. The paws were not omitted, nor the other bones, which we found means to soften. The extremity was such, that nothing remained but Brazil-wood, the driest of all woods, which many, however, in their despair, attempted to chew. Carguilleray du Pont, our leader, holding out one day a piece in his mouth, said to me with a deep sigh, 'Alas, my friend, I have due to me in France the sum of four

a box of letters wrapt in sere-cloth, as was the custom; among them was one directed to the magistrates of whatever port they might arri in which this worthy friend of the Guises deno the men whom he had invited out to Brazil to the peaceable exercise of the reformed religi heretics worthy of the stake. The magistra Hennebonne happened to favour the Reform and thus the devilish malignity of Villegagnoi frustrated, and his treachery exposed. Of th who had feared to trust themselves in a vessel s ly stored, and so unfit for the voyage, three we to death by this persecutor. Others of the Hu fled from him to the Portuguese, where they compelled to apostatise, and profess a religion they despised as much as they hated."

The attention of the Portuguese governmen by this time roused to the importance of taking session of this fine port, and effectually colonis The nephew of Mem da Sa was accordingly des ed to Bahia for such assistance as might enab to extirpate the French. An expedition was out, consisting of two ships of war and eight c merchantmen, and the governor took the comm person, accompanied by the Jesuit Nobrega.

"Early in January 1560, they reached Rio neiro. The governor's intention was, to enter dead of the night, and surprise the island; the espied by the centinels, and obliged to anchor bar. The French immediately made ready f fence, forsook their ships, and with eight hundr tive archers retired to their forts. Mem da S discovered that he was in want of canoes and

thousand livres; and would to God, that, after giving charge for the whole, I held in my hand a pennyworth of and a single glass of wine!'" Several died of hunge they had begun to form the resolution of devouring each when land appeared in view.

crafts, and of men who knew the harbour. Nobrega was sent to St Vincente to solicit this aid from the inhabitants; he performed his commission with his usual skill, and soon despatched a good brigantine, canoes, and boats laden with stores, and manned by Portuguese, Mamalucos, and natives—men who knew the coast, and were inured to warfare with the Tupinambas and Tamoyos. Five Jesuits conducted the reinforcement. With this succour Mem da Sa entered the port, and won the landing-place of the island. Two days and nights they vainly battered fortresses whose walls and bulwarks were of solid rock; thus uselessly they expended all their powder and ball, many of their people were wounded, and they were about to reimbark their artillery, and retreat. But though they had hitherto displayed little skill in directing their attacks, there was no lack of courage in the Portuguese, and the shame of returning from a bootless expedition provoked them to one desperate exertion. They assaulted and won the largest of the outworks which commanded the landing, then they stormed the rock in which the magazine had been excavated, and carried that also. This so intimidated the French, that, in the ensuing night, they and the Tamoyos abandoned the other posts, and got into their boats and fled, some to the ships, some to the main land."*

As this action took place on St Sebastian's day (Jan. 20), the governor named the place St Sebastian, in honour as well of the patron-saint as of the young King of Portugal, who bore that name. Here Mem da Sa founded the city, upon which he bestowed the same appellation, but which is now almost universally called Rio de Janeiro. The whole of the works were completed by the Indians under the Jesuits, without

* Southey's History, vol. i. p. 292. The French subsequently attempted to form settlements in Pernambuco and Paraiba, but were prevented in every instance.

any expense whatever to the state. In the midst the city he assigned the company ground for a c lege. The donation was ratified at Lisbon the suing year.

Scarcely had Mem da Sa succeeded in driving the French, when he was called upon to combat a a new enemy. The Aymores, or Botucodoes, of the Brazilian tribes the most savage and formidab infested the Ilheos and Porto Seguro, and threate the capital itself. With the assistance of his Ind allies, the governor succeeded in subduing th But other Indian tribes continually molested the tlers, and the influence of the Jesuits over the nati alone saved the colonists from extermination.

"The English," Mr Southey states, "were at time endeavouring to establish themselves in Bra and choosing their position better than the Frer though not with better fortune, they fixed themsel in considerable numbers at Paraiba do Sul. Th they connected themselves with the native wom and in another generation, the Anglo-Tupi Mam cos might have been found dangerous neighbour the governor of St Sebastian's, steadily pursuing system of his court, had not, in the fifth year of t abode, attacked and exterminated them. They escaped from the merciless war which the Portugu

† "Their mode of warfare was as savage as their habi life; they had no chief or leader; they never went in l companies; they never stood up against an enemy face to f but lay in wait like wild beasts, and took their deadly aim i the thickets. In one point they were greatly inferior to the c tribes; for, being an inland people, they could not swim, such was their ignorance, or dread of the water, that any str which they could not ford was considered a sufficient def against them. It may well be supposed that such men w be impatient of slavery; some who were taken by the P guese, refused to eat, and died by that slowest and most r lute mode of suicide."—*Southey's History of Brazil*, i. p. 295.

waged against all interlopers, fled into the interior, and either they were eaten by the savages, as was believed, or lived and died among them, becoming savages themselves."

Mem da Sa had continued to sustain the government of Brazil for an unusually long period, when D. Luiz de Vasconcellos was appointed to succeed him. A considerable number of Jesuits, headed by F. Ignacio de Azevedo, were sent out with the new governor. The fleet in which they sailed, encountered, in separate divisions, several French and English ships; Luiz de Vasconcellos fell in an action with the latter off Tercera, and the Jesuits were butchered by a French pirate, named Jacques Sore. One only escaped, in a lay habit. Nobrega did not live to hear the fate of his brethren. Prematurely worn out by incessant fatigue, he closed a life of unexampled exertion and heroic virtue at the age of fifty-three.* Luiz de Almeida was appointed governor in the place of the unfortunate Vasconcellos. Mem da Sa lived to welcome him on his arrival, and then died, after an able and prosperous administration of fourteen years.

The growth of the colony had been so rapid, that when Luiz de Brito succeeded De Almeida as governor, it was deemed advisable to divide the country into two governments, all the districts southward of Porto Seguro being included in the division of which Rio de Janeiro was made the capital. This arrangement being soon found productive of inconvenience, the two parts were re-united in 1578, under the administration of D. Diogo Lourenzo da Veiga,—the fatal year in which Sebastian, King of Portugal, was cut off, with

* "The day before he died, he went abroad, and took leave of all his friends, as if he were about to undertake a long journey. They asked him whither he was going? His reply was —'*Home*, to my own country.'"

the whole flower of his nobility, in his expedition against the Moors. Brazil, in consequence of this disastrous event, passed with the mother country under the dominion of Spain, in which state it continued for about forty years. Philip II. offered all the Brazilian colonies, in absolute sovereignity, with the title of king, to the Duke of Braganza, on condition of his relinquishing his claim to the Portuguese crown, but he declined the insidious offer. Neither was Philip, however, when he made the proposal, nor Braganza when he refused it, aware of the importance of the country, which was destined, two hundred years after, to afford an asylum to the court of Lisbon, and subsequently to eclipse, as an independent empire, the mother country itself.

At this period, Bahia, Pernambuco, and Rio de Janeiro, were in a very flourishing condition. The mud dwellings of the early settlers had given way to well-built houses; residences of a superior description had been erected for the accommodation of persons in authority, and for the purpose of commerce, and improvements in the arts had been to some extent introduced from Europe. But the transfer of the crown into foreign hands materially changed the aspect of affairs in Brazil. The Spaniards took little interest in a country so inferior, as was then supposed, in mineral wealth, to their own colonies on the western coast. By the unfortunate subjection of Portugal to Spain, her colonies were moreover involved in hostilities with England, whose merchants had commenced trading to Brazil.* Two English vessels trading peaceably to

* "The first Englishman who is mentioned as having traded to this country, is Master Wm Hawkins, of Plymouth, father Sir John Hawkins, 'a man much esteemed by King Henry VIII., as a principal sea captain. He armed a ship of his own, of 250 tons, called the Paul of Plymouth, wherewith he made two voyages to Brazil, one in 1530, and the other in 1532; in the first of which he brought a Brazilian King, as they

San Vincente, were attacked, in the harbour, by three Spanish ships. The attack began in the evening, and continued as long as the moon gave them light, by which time one of the Spanish vessels was sunk,* and on the following morning the British captain put to sea. This was the first act of hostility committed by the English in Brazil; and in this instance they were not the aggressors. An expedition was subsequently fitted out by the Earl of Cumberland, and its instructions were not equally pacific. The fleet entered the Reconcave of Bahia, and plundered it, the city being preserved only by the Indian archers. Raleigh served in this expedition. Shortly afterwards, the celebrated Cavendish came to annoy their coast; but his conduct was that of a free-booter, and left a stain upon the character of his nation. The most remarkable expedition of the English to the coast of Brazil, was that of Sir James Lancaster to Pernambuco. This man had, by his own account, been brought up among the Portuguese, had lived among them as a gentleman, served with them as a soldier, and dwelt among them as a merchant; there

termed him, to present him in his wild accoutrements to King Henry,—at the sight of whom the king and all the nobility did not a little marvail, and not without cause.' One Martin Cockeram, of Plymouth, was left behind in pledge for him. The Brazilian remained nearly twelve months in England, and died on his passage home, which was feared would turn to the loss of the life of Martin Cockeram, his pledge. Nevertheless, the savages being fully persuaded of the honest dealing of our men toward their prince, restored him without any harm." *Southey's History of Brazil*, vol. i. p. 373.

* "By reason," says Lopez Vaz, "that these ships were weakened with former tempests, and were manned with the refuse of all the Spanish fleet, (the sicke men and women being embarked therein,) the Englishmen easily put them to the worst, and sunk one of them, and might also have sunk another, if they had been so minded; but they desired not the destruction of any man: and doubtless it is the greatest valour that any man can show, that when he may do hurt, he will not."

was, therefore, "a kind of moral treason," Mr Southey remarks, "in his bearing arms against a people with whom he had been so long domesticated." But he appears to have conducted himself with so much moderation and humanity as almost to deserve forgiveness for his treachery. Pernambuco was taken.

"Lancaster led the way," continues Mr Southey; "the fort began to play upon them, and struck away great part of the ensign of the galley. They run her a-ground right under the battery, within a coit's cast of it; her back was broken with the shock, the sea made a breach over her, and she sunk instantly; the other boats did the like. There were seven brass guns in the fort, which the Portuguese pointed so steep downwards, that their shot was spent in the sand, only one man being wounded. Lancaster exulting at this, for a well-aimed discharge must have been murtherous, exclaimed, upon them! Upon them! All by God's help is ours! They ran forward to storm the place; the Portuguese lost heart, retired into some near bushes, and being pursued, fled by a way which is still dry, the tide not having reached it. Lancaster then made signal for the ships to enter: he left a garrison in the fort, planted its guns against Olinda, from which quarter he apprehended most danger, and marched to the base-town, as he calls Recife, which contained at that time rather more than a hundred houses. The people, at his approach, embarked in caravels and boats, and abandoned the place, leaving the rich lading of the carrack and great store of country produce to the conquerors."*

The whole and sole purpose of this voyage being plunder, when they had laden their vessels with every thing valuable they could procure, they set sail and

* Southey's History of Brazil, vol. i. p. 387.

reached home in safety. The success of Lancaster's enterprise would probably have encouraged our countrymen to undertake similar adventures, had not a more tempting lure been held out to them by Raleigh, in the fabulous city of gold, the El Dorado of which England dreamed.*

About this period, Roberto Diaz, a descendant of Caramuru, professed to have discovered in some part of Brazil, a rich mine of silver, which he offered to disclose on condition of being created a marquis. This demand Philip II. refused to grant, and the secret, if the man had one, died with him. In 1611, the French renewed their attempts to form a settlement on the coast, and they succeeded in establishing themselves in the island of Maranham. They were not dislodged till nine years afterwards, when a permanent Portuguese colony was planted there.

* "This imaginary kingdom obtained the name of El Dorado, from the fashion of its lord, which has the merit of being in savage costume. His body was anointed every morning with a certain fragrant gum of great price, and gold dust was then blown upon him, through a tube, till he was covered with it: the whole was washed off at night. This the barbarian thought a more magnificent and costlier attire than could be afforded by any other potentate in the world; and hence the Spaniards called him El Dorado, or the Gilded One."—*Southey's History of Brazil*, vol. ii. p. 394.

Among other descriptions of the capital of this imaginary country, is the following, which was communicated as certain intelligence by D. M. del Barco. "The palace," he says, "stood in a lake island. It was built of white stone; at the entrance were two towers, and between them a column five-and-twenty feet in height; on its top was a large silver moon, and two living lions were fastened to its base with chains of gold. Having passed by these keepers, you came into a quadrangle planted with trees, and watered by a silver fountain, which spouted through four golden pipes. The gate of the palace was of copper; it was very small, and its bolt was received in the solid rock. Within, a golden sun was placed upon an altar of silver, and four lamps were kept burning before it day and night."

But the evil days of Brazil were now drawing on, and the Portuguese, instead of extending their settlements in that country, were on the point of losing all that they possessed there. The intolerance and cruelty of Philip had involved him in a long and cruel war with Holland and the neighbouring provinces; and the efforts to which they had been impelled by their zeal in the cause of civil and religious liberty, had raised the Dutch to the first rank among maritime powers. The foreign possessions of the crown of Spain were of course considered as lawful prey; and having successfully attacked and enriched themselves from the Spanish colonies in the East, they now turned their attention towards America. In 1621, was formed the Dutch West India Company, which was invested, like all the commercial bodies established at that period for similar undertakings, with exclusive privileges, in consideration of which they undertook to carry on the concerns of war, as as well as of trade, in those remote regions. In 1624, they fitted out a considerable armament, under the command of Jacob Willekins, one of their most esteemed naval officers, and the famous Peter Heyne, with instructions to begin their operations by an attack on the capital. The success of the expedition was prompt and complete. St Salvador was taken almost without a struggle, and all the inhabitants either submitted, or fled. The Dutch soon shewed that their intention was not, like that of former invaders, plunder merely, but conquest, for they immediately set themselves to strengthen the walls. The Portuguese rallied at a village in the Reconcave, and hostilities were carried on with the greatest barbarity on both sides.* D. Marcos Teixeira,

* "The Portuguese were said to have put an officer to death, whom they were sending to Pernambuco, because he had the *chiguas* or jiggers in his feet, and could not march fast enough

bishop of St Salvador, exchanged the episcopal
the military character, hoisted the crucifix for his
ıdard, and, animated by an heroic spirit, rallied
ınd him his clergy and others who were attached
ıim. His force soon amounted to fourteen hun-
l Portuguese, and two hundred and fifty In-
ıs; and from defending himself, he was soon ena-
l to become the assailant. He began by cutting
the Dutch parties and detachments; he inter-
ted their supplies of provisions, prohibited the cul-
tion of sugar and tobacco, and at length suc-
ded in placing the city under a complete state
blockade. He died in consequence of the unu-
l fatigue he had undergone; but his death did
prevent his successors from persevering in the
ıe system, which prepared the way for the events
t followed. The Dutch were much weakened
the return of Willekins with his booty to Eu-
e, and by the departure of Heyne on a fruitless
ıedition to Angola, together with the subsequent
ı of their general, Hans Vandort, who fell into
ambush, and was killed. The greatest exertions
·e in the mean time made in Spain to regain the
·, and the most powerful armament that had ever
ssed the line, consisting of forty sail and 8000
liers, under the command of D. Fabrique de
ledo,* arrived at Bahia early in 1626. The
ıtch became an easy prey: they capitulated on
ıdition of being sent to Holland with their personal
ggage and sufficient arms to protect them on the
·age. The Spanish fleet returned to Europe in
ımph.

his conductors; and the Dutch, in revenge, drew out their
ıoners, tied them to one another, and shot them."—*South-
s History of Brazil*, vol. i. p. 486.

* It is asserted in the Edinburgh Encyclopedia, that Osorio,
rquis of Valduesu, was the commander of this expedition.
have taken the authority of Mr Southey.

The Dutch Company, eager to repair this loss and disgrace, soon projected new attempts on Brazil; but the deficiency of their resources compelled them to delay an expedition attended with such an enormous expense. Their cruisers, however, lay in wait for the Spanish and Portuguese merchantmen, as they returned from the East and West Indies, and with such success, that immense wealth was the result of this species of warfare.* Early in 1630, a new expedition, under the command of the Dutch admiral Hendrick Lonck, arrived off the coast of the fertile province of Pernambuco. Olinda, the capital, was taken by Wardenberg, who commanded the troops, after a feeble resistance on the part of Albuquerque, the governor: the neighbouring forts were defended more bravely. On abandoning the city, the Portuguese retired into the woods, where they took heart, and a severe and obstinate predatory warfare was carried on against the invaders from their camp of Bom Jesus;† but their efforts

* In thirteen years they had taken 545 vessels, the proceeds of which amounted to 7,500,000*l.*

† The Portuguese were warmly assisted by their Indian allies. The following anecdote of one of them records perhaps as powerful an instance of heroic virtue as the history of any country can produce. "An Indian, called Jagoarar by his countrymen, and Simam Soares by the Portuguese, had lain eight years in irons at Rio Grande. His offence was, that he had gone over to the Dutch when they were in possession of St Salvador, but he had protested that his only motive was to bring away his wife and child, who were by some accident in their power. The Portuguese wanted virtue to believe him; and notwithstanding he was the uncle of Camaram, their best ally, they had kept him eight years in this cruel confinement. The Dutch set him free. Immediately he went to his clan. The marks of my chains, said he, are still bleeding; but it is guilt which is infamous, and not punishment. The worse the Portuguese have used me, the more merit will be yours and mine in persisting faithfully to serve them, especially now that they are in distress. They listened to his persuasions, and he

were rendered unavailing by desertion and treachery, and after a three months' siege, the camp surrendered, on condition of marching out with the honours of war, and being furnished with a free passage to the Indies.

The Portuguese thus saw this colony a second time on the point of being wrested from them, and they resolved to strain every nerve to recover it. They were again seconded, though more coldly than before, by Spain. A formidable armament was equipped, but an infectious disease seized the troops before their departure; two thousand perished, and the expedition was broken up. In the following year, the fleet was again assembled: it consisted of fifty-four vessels, the Portuguese having collected their whole naval force. The Dutch, not aware of the enemy, sailed from their harbours with only sixteen vessels. Accustomed, however, to despise the Portuguese, they hesitated not to engage even against such fearful odds; but they paid dear for their rashness. The admiral was blown up with his vessel; the second in command shared the same fate; yet, the bravery of the Dutch still saved them from a total defeat; and they made an admirable retreat to Olinda, carrying with them a Spanish vessel as their prize. The Portuguese admiral derived no decisive result from his success. He contented himself with landing twelve hundred men to reinforce the Portuguese army under the command of Albuquerque, and having provided for the security of the capital, he again set sail for Europe. Another expedition, despatched the next year, under the command of Don Frederic de Toledo, was still less productive of serious injury to the enemy. The Dutch continued to make great

brought to the assistance of his oppressors, a body of constant allies, with whom he served them so well as to obtain, and deserve, an honourable name in history.

progress in Brazil, notwithstanding the bravery c Portuguese generals and the assistance they de from their Indian allies ; and at length, having pleted, in three successive campaigns, the conqu the provinces of Pernambuco, Paraiba, and Rio (de, they were masters of all that part of Brazil lies to the north of the river Francisco. These cesses inspired the Dutch government with the that, by a great effort, they might complete and s the conquest of Brazil. Count Maurice of Na equally distinguished by birth and by his milita lents, was judiciously selected as the comman this expedition. He arrived at Pernambuco in ber 1636, and joining his troops to those previou Brazil, he entered the province of Seregippe, had been hitherto untouched, defeated the Portu general Bagnuolo in several successive engagen and finally made himself master of the capital ar whole province.* He then marched against the s holds which the Portuguese still retained in th tricts north of Olinda ; these he successively red and he obtained a voluntary submission from th more northerly province of Siara, which was the most entirely in the possession of the natives. E however, could not be considered as conquered t Dutch were masters of the capital. Count Ma accordingly marched to St Salvador, and laid to it; but the Portuguese had omitted nothing t it in a respectable state of defence. Three which defended the place, were carried by storm on attempting to storm the city itself, the Dutch repulsed with great loss ; and on the arrival of a forcement from Portugal, Count Maurice found self under the necessity of raising the siege.

* The whole military force of the Dutch in Brazil is to have amounted to only 6180 regulars, and about 10 dians.

In the following year (1639), extraordinary exertions were made by the court of Madrid to recover possession of the provinces they had lost. Forty-six vessels were despatched, with 5000 troops under D. Jorge de Mascarenhas, who was appointed governor, with the title of viceroy; but sickness attacked the fleet on the passage, half the number of troops perished, and the rest arrived at St Salvador in a melancholy condition. Mascarenhas was able, however, to muster an army of 12,000 men, with which he proceeded against Olinda. The Dutch were not ill-prepared to receive them, and a most furious engagement ensued, which lasted four days.* On the first day, the Dutch admiral, Loos, was killed; yet, victory remained on the side of the Dutch. In the end, the Portuguese fleet was entirely dispersed; great part of it perished upon rocks, and of that mighty armament, only six vessels returned to Spain, leaving the Dutch navy to ride triumphant in the bay of St Salvador. Both parties, however, were so much weakened and tired by the calamities of so long a war, that a negotiation was entered into for a suspension of hostilities. While this was pending, a revolution took place at home, which changed the Dutch from enemies into allies. In 1640, Portugal shook off the Spanish yoke, and once more saw a native sovereign of the house of Braganza seated on the throne of his ancestors. The preservation of the national independence now becoming the first object, it was necessary to postpone all attempt to recover possession of their colonies; and a treaty of peace and alliance was concluded between

* A detachment of Portuguese troops took advantage of this diversion to enter Dutch Brazil, and being seconded by the natives, they gained considerable advantages, and committed great devastations; but were ultimately subdued and expelled by the Dutch. In this war, Cameram, the old ally of the Portuguese, greatly distinguished himself. His wife, who had received the Christian name and title of Donna Clara, fought by his side.

the two nations, on the 23d of June, 1641, in w it was stipulated, that the limits of Dutch and P guese Brazil should remain as they then stood.

Conceiving their possessions to be now secure thrifty republicans thought only of reducing the e mous expense of their colonial establishment, Count Maurice was succeeded by a trusty boa commissioners, consisting of a merchant of Am dam, a jeweller of Haerlem, and a carpenter of dleburg.* Under the system of retrenchment pur by these wise men, the fortifications were negle the ammunition-stores were disposed of to the P guese, who were willing to purchase them at a price, and a large proportion of the troops were mitted to returned to Europe. After the departu the governor, the tyranny of the Dutch became int able. The Portuguese and native Brazilians, o one hand, hated their new masters equally as op sors and as heretics ; while they, on the other h seemed to consider the Pernambucans less as their jects than their rivals in trade, and the most vexa laws and regulations were dictated by the narrow of commercial jealousy. But the worst act o Dutch authorities was, the passing of an edict v invited all slaves to give information against su their masters as had concealed arms, with a prom liberty for their reward. By this means, the liv the Portuguese were placed at all times in the han their slaves, who had only to hide arms, and the form against their masters, many of whom, the room to believe, suffered torture or death without ing been guilty of the crime alleged. The P

* According to one account, Count Maurice was rec because, like Lord Wellesley when governor-general of I he was deemed not sufficiently economical. Mr Southe cribes to him a prescience of a coming storm, and says, th solicited his recall. After a residence of eight years in B he arrived in Holland in 1644.

guese began at length almost universally to rise against their oppressors, and a civil war was begun and carried on with great animosity on both sides, for some time under the singular circumstance of its being publicly disavowed by the government of the mother country, though secretly encouraged and supported by the Portuguese governor. In one memorable engagement with the Dutch, the patriots completely routed them, taking prisoners their two generals, Hans and Blaar.* The spirit and resolution with which the struggle was maintained for nearly ten years, were such as religion combined with political hatred, would seem alone adequate to inspire.†

* The two generals yielded themselves prisoners at the Casas de *Dona Anna*. "All they demanded was, that their lives should be spared; and they would fain have stipulated that the Indians in their service should be spared also. The Portuguese demurred at this; they regarded these people as rebels, and they were exasperated by the recent excesses which they had committed. The unhappy savages put an end to the discussion:—knowing how little mercy they could expect, they attacked their inexorable tyrants,—and when they were overpowered, no mercy was shewn. Every man was put to the sword. Cameram was related to their chief. The Christianity which he had been taught, did little toward abating the ferocity of his savage character;—his kinsman, in his judgement, deserved death doubly, as a rebel to his king and to his God; but that he might die with as much honour as possible, he put him to death with his own hand, and gave him decent burial; the bodies of the others being left to the beasts and birds. The number who were thus massacred, was about two hundred. One of the Indians having received a mortal wound, dropt, and lay like a corpse among the dead: but when the first Portuguese came within his reach, he sprang up with a dying effort, and stabbed him thrice, then fell and expired. The wives of these wretched Indians, beholding the slaughter, caught up their children, and dashed out their brains against the stones." —*Southey's Hist. of Brazil*, vol. ii. p. 127.

† During this contest Cameram died, in whom the Portuguese lost a firm ally, and the Dutch were delivered by his death from an indefatigable enemy. His Indian name was *Poty* (the

In the mean time, the Dutch government a
engaged in a sanguinary contest with England
sovereignty of the seas, were unable to take e
measures to secure their remote possessions. A
serious remonstrances to the court of Lisbon, w
with assurances and promises on the part of th
and by advantageous treaties of commerce, the
pacified and lulled into security. In 1654, wh
republic had concluded peace with England, an
become evident that the amicable profession
Portuguese monarch were wholly insincere, p
tions were made to send out a considerable arm
but, in the midst of the arrangements for this p
tidings arrived, that their possessions in Bra
no more. To the Pernambucans, assisted by
of the new Brazilian company, is ascribed the
of finally expelling the Dutch from that countr
inda, the capital, was surrendered by Schou
governor, on the 20th of January, 1654, witho
ing a blow, on condition of the garrison's m
out with all the honours of war, and a safe
being guaranteed to the Dutch, in returning
own transports to Holland. All this was effe
most entirely by the exertions of private indi
who sustained both the conflict and the cost of
without the aid, and at most with only the con
of the Portuguese government. "From the
Joam Fernandez Vieira (the patriot general)
his historian, "Francisco Barretto, the royal co
er, received the keys of the city, and the c
Portugal its empire of Brazil." Various

Prawn). He had been educated by the Jesuits, and co
Portuguese well; but he always conversed with person
and strangers through an interpreter, lest any defec
nunciation or impropriety of speech might seem to
from that dignity which it was his pride to preserve.
markable that, often as he was in action, he scarcely
ceived a wound.

in the different captaincies, which the governor
either unable or unwilling by their interference
vent. "The Portuguese of Maranham and
says Mr Southey, "were pursuing the same
of oppression, by which the Indians had been
minated from the shores of the older capta
The laws allowed, that Indians taken in just we
slaves, and also those who, having been made pr
in war with each other, had been purchased
Portuguese: these latter, as having been desti
be eaten, were called Indians of the cord, in a
to the *mussarama*. From hence all the imm
able evils of a regular slave-trade necessarily
Every captain of a fort made war upon the
tribes whenever he chose, with or without a p
for the mere purpose of making slaves. The
of purchasing, served even more easily to cover th
atrocious acts of violence. The traders returne
all they could seize by force or fraud,* presente
for the forms of examination as Cord-Indian
compelled them by threats and torments to giv
answers, as were readily accepted by judges wh
themselves implicated in similar transactions." T
were in this state when Vieyra the Jesuit arri
Maranham. This extraordinary man immediat
himself to work to effect the abolition of this nef
system, and he partially succeeded: for a tim
natives were restored to a state of comparative
dom. The most bitter and determined oppone
the Jesuits, were the Paulists, who, unwilling
sign the advantages they had reaped from their s
of hunting for slaves, shewed even a disposition

* "One captain having got the chief of an Indian
in his power, fastened lighted fusees to each of his f
which were to burn there till he delivered himself fro
torture, by giving a certain number of slaves."—*Sou
Hist. of Brazil*, vol. ii. p. 470.

the governor, Salvador Correa de Sae Benairdes, use he was the friend of the Jesuits.

bout the conclusion of the Spanish war, an in- ection of an alarming nature broke out in the pro- e of Maranham, at the head of which was Ma- Beckman, a native of Lisbon, but of foreign ction. Two things, he said, were necessary for alvation of the state,—the abolition of all mono- s, and the expulsion of the Jesuits. Having red their plans, the insurgents surprised the town, before day-break had made themselves masters of whole city, the arsenal, and the fort, imprisoning governor in his own house. When tidings of the rrection reached Lisbon, Gomez Freyre was de- hed to quell it, which he accomplished without ulty, the insurgents making but a faint show of tance. Beckman, the ringleader, was taken, and time afterwards executed. Under the new gover- r, Maranham, which had hitherto been the most ess province in Brazil, enjoyed a season of com- tive tranquillity.

ut another revolt, of a much more formidable char- r, broke out in the province of Pernambuco in rear 1694. In the course of the contest with Dutch, it had frequently been found necessary to rms into the hands of the negro slaves; they had me, in some degree, warmed into courage; . In the confusion consequent upon the loss of da, about forty made their escape, and established emselves in a favourable spot, not far from the river Porto do Calvo. They became a resource ll of their nation who could emancipate themse- s from bondage, and their numbers soon became derable. They supplied the want of wives, like founders of Rome, by violence, sweeping the hbouring plantations of every woman of colour. al laws, together with the possession of a fertile ory, and copious opportunities of plunder, caused

their population to multiply with enormous rapidity. They soon erected themselves into a nation, assuming the name of the Palmarese,* under an elective monarch named Zombi; and having procured supplies of arms and ammunition from the planters, they formed stockades of large trees round their capital and other towns. They remained unmolested for forty years, till at length, the population of their principal town amounted to not less than 20,000, and their power had attained a height which threatened the existence of the colony. In 1696, the Pernambucan government, seriously alarmed, determined on their extirpation, and 6000 men under D. John de Lancastro took the field against them. Unable to cope with so formidable a force, ten thousand of the Palmarese shut themselves up, with all their effects, in their capital, which is described as having possessed a certain degree of magnificence. The Portuguese immediately advanced to lay siege to it, but were dismayed at the formidable aspect of the works, for which they were quite unprepared, having made no adequate provision of artillery and supplies. The spirits of the invading army were still further damped by repeated and destructive sallies of the besiegers, and the Portuguese were repulsed with considerable loss by these warlike negroes, who employed arrows, fire-arms, boiling water, and fire-brands against the assailants. But their ammunition was exhausted, and they were beginning to feel all the horrors of famine, when a reinforcement received by the besieging army, deprived them at once of courage and of hope. A general assault took place, and the resistance of the dispirited defenders being feeble, the place was soon carried. Zombi and his followers, preferring death to captivity, threw themselves down the rocky side of the fort, and perished. Almost all the survivors were taken prisо-

* Taking their name from the palm forests of the interior.

ners and sold as slaves. Such was the termination of the first black kingdom in the New World, the history of which, short as was its duration, might have taught those who affect to rank the negro with the brute creation, that he is at least not incapable of civilization. The Palmarese were probably not much behind, in any respect, the Paulists and other Brazilians; and had their success been equal to their bravery, their right to make slaves of the whites, would have been to the full as good as that which the Portuguese had to enslave them.

This event was almost immediately succeeded by a brilliant era in the history of Brazil, the discovery, in 1699, of extensive gold mines; followed, about thirty years after, by another still more unexpected, that of the diamond mines. Portugal has immensely enriched herself with the results of these golden discoveries, but it may be questioned whether Brazil has not been greatly the loser by them.

Rio de Janeiro had enjoyed a greater degree of tranquillity since its foundation, than any other settlement in Brazil, having continued to flourish during all the calamities by which the capital and Pernambuco had been visited. But, in 1710, its prosperity was interrupted by the arrival of a French squadron under M. du Clerc. This officer, whose object was plunder, landed about a thousand marines, and attacked the city, no effort having been made to stop them on their way, by the governor, although he had at command about 12,000 troops. After a short, but desperate struggle, the French, however, were overpowered by numbers, and surrendered at discretion. The victory of the Portuguese was disgraced by their barbarity. They massacred nearly all who fell into their hands. Even the surgeons sent from the French ships to attend their wounded comrades, were butchered; and Du Clerc, who was taken prisoner, was murdered in his bed. But France was able as well

as willing to take vengeance, and the celebrated Admiral Duguay-Trouin was selected to inflict on the Brazilians the punishment due to their inhumanity. The next year, he entered the bay with a considerable fleet, and, with the most daring valour, leading through all the range of batteries which defended it, carried the place by storm. After residing there for some time, to refresh his troops, he ransomed the city for 600,000 cruzados, and then returned, in triumph, to Europe. Peace was soon afterwards concluded between France and Portugal, by which Rio de Janeiro became secured from foreign invaders.

Disputes innumerable had arisen between Portugal and Spain, relative to their respective colonies on the banks of the Rio de la Plata, when, in 1750, a convention was entered into, by which their limits were agreed on. By this treaty, Portugal resigned the colony of Santo Sacramento, near the mouth of the Plata, (which had been ceded to them by the treaty of Utrecht,) in exchange for seven of the missionary settlements formed by the Jesuits on the eastern bank of the Uruguay. About 30,000 civilized Indians of the Guarany tribe, with their wives and children, the inhabitants of that territory, found themselves, by the unfeeling act of reckless tyranny compelled to emigrate from the land which they had received "from God and their fathers," to go into other lands, chosen for them, which were unknown and unhealthy. The Jesuits had laboured more successfully among these people than among any other tribe; and numbers of the order resided among them, who appealed, but in vain, against the arbitrary arrangement which had been made by the European governments. Now, however, the Jesuits became themselves suspected by the natives, who accused them of having sold their lands to the Portuguese; their power was at an end, and they were little better than prisoners in a court where they had recently enjoyed an absolute dom

ion, founded on the affectionate attachment of the people. The Indians rose in all directions to oppose the mandate; but the short and useless, though vigorous resistance which they made, only left them more than ever in the power of their enemies.* Great numbers were slaughtered, and those who refused to submit were compelled to leave the country. This war greatly strengthened the prejudice against the Jesuits,—a prejudice as unjust as the attack made on the people whom they had instructed. In the year 1761, when Carlos III. acceded to the throne of Spain, the treaty of limits was annulled; the Guaranies, who had been so wantonly and cruelly expelled, were instructed to return to their dilapidated towns and wasted country, and the Jesuits, resuming their benignant administration, exerted themselves to repair

* "The chief of these Indians was named Sepe Tyarayu; he was a man of extraordinary courage and capacity. On one occasion, he was persuaded to enter the enemy's quarters with thirty of his men, and treat concerning a ransom. The Portuguese seized them, and then let the Guaranies know that they would exchange their prisoners for horses. To expedite the business, they sent Sepe himself, under a guard of twelve horsemen; he was on horseback also, but naked, and without arms or spurs. A river was between them and the Guaranies: Sepe desired that he might cross it to confer with his countrymen. When this was refused, he asked, how it was possible for him to settle the affair, unless he were allowed to communicate with the persons concerned? But with that cunning which is part of the savage character, he told them, as though in a sportive bravado, that if he chose, he could go to his countrymen in spite of any efforts to prevent him. They laughed, and asked in mockery how it was to be done. 'In this manner,' replied Sepe; and exciting his horse at once by the scourge and voice, he set off at full speed. Before they thought of pursuit, it was too late; they fired and missed him; he got into the woods, dismounted, swam the river, and just at night-fall entered the Guarani camp, shivering and almost exhausted with cold. He lost his life in a subsequent engagement."—*Southey's Hist. of Brazil*, vol. iii. p. 466.

as far as possible the evils that had been done. But the part they had acted on behalf of the oppressed natives, though not the cause of the persecution under which they were destined to sink, yet, by the occasion it afforded to their enemies, was the circumstance which immediately led to their expulsion. Sebastian Joseph de Carvalho e Mello, better known by his subsequent title of Marquis de Pombal, was at this period the despotic prime-minister of Portugal, and to him the final destruction of the order must be ascribed. "The great and laudable object of his ambition," says Mr Southey, "was to benefit his country, and restore Portugal, if not to the foreign empire which she had once possessed, at least to her former state of plenty and prosperity at home. Ignorance, superstition, and intolerance, were the main obstacles to the improvement which he designed; and whosoever attempted to remove these evils in Portugal, would be opposed by the clergy. But the original jealousy between the regular and secular clergy was still subsisting: the regulars were divided among themselves, and the only point in which all the other orders were agreed, was in envying and hating the Jesuits. Now the Jesuits were the only persons whom Carvalho feared. If they were removed, his plans would proceed without impediment; he might crush the friars, reform the respectable orders, lessen the influence of the court of Rome, and place the religious establishment of the kingdom upon a footing not inconsistent with the progress of knowledge. Carvalho was more than fifty years of age, when he entered upon his ministry. He soon acquired the favour of the sovereign by his superior talents; extraordinary and tremendous occurences brought those talents into full action, and the ascendancy which he then obtained over the king, enabled him to carry into effect with absolute authority his schemes for the renovation of the kingdom. This was the one and worthy object

n which he was passionately bent; unhappily, he upled at no means by which it might be promoted; l they who maligned his motives, did not traduce nature, when they represented him as without con- nce and without humanity. Seeing the miserable e into which every thing in Portugal had sunk, he the necessity of great changes: his temper led to bold and violent measures; and though it was l of him by his enemies, that he acted first, and ught afterwards, when his measures were once tak- he persevered in them inflexibly, whether they e right or wrong. He had a large portion of t national pride for which the Portuguese are re- rkable, and he had also an overweening confidence his own talents and strength of character; but his nts were very great; no man ever approached him hout feeling the presence of a powerful and com- nding mind. He served his king faithfully and lously; he loved his country; and happy might it for him if the desire of the public good might be aded in defence of actions which are decidedly ked and abominable. Upon that plea, however, rested with perfect equanimity, like Sylla, but in a different retirement, when disgrace and obloquy, l the grief of seeing his wisest plans overthrown, e added to the evils of old age, and infirmity, and n. However much Carvalho must have desired to sen the power of the Jesuits, it is not probable that had conceived even the most distant thoughts extinguishing the order, when he began his ad- nistration. But when events arose, which seemed render such an attempt feasible, he pursued it h characteristic and inhuman perseverance."*

His brother, Francesco Xavier de Mendonça Fur- o, was appointed governor and captain-general of uranham and Para. He hated the Jesuits; and,

* Southey's Hist. of Brazil, vol. iii. p. 505.

in depriving them of that authority which they had so beneficently exercised, he added insult to injury, sneeringly telling them, that they might henceforth serve God with less trial of their patience. Men were not wanting to stand forward in their support, and to rebut the gross and scandalous calumnies invented to hasten their downfall; but the influence of Pombal was too great to be borne up against, and their day of power was past. In 1760, they were ignominiously expelled from Brazil.* Those of the Spanish colonies, eight

* "The colleges, churches, and habitations of the Jesuits had been taken possession of for the crown, and the property therein taken for confiscation. Their books and papers had been seized; their very hospitals had not been spared; the patients had been compelled to leave their beds, some of them in such a condition that they died while they were being removed to another place of shelter. At St Paul's, notwithstanding the old enmity with which they had been regarded, they were treated with humanity and respect in their disgrace; and the bishop, Fr. Antonio da Madre de Deos, said publicly, that the expulsion of the Jesuits would draw after it the ruin of religion first, and the overthrow of the government afterwards. The Rio was the place of embarkation for all the members from the south. One hundred and forty-five were stowed in one ship below decks, like negroes upon the middle passage; till the surgeon obtained some alleviation of their durance, by assuring the captain, that if he persisted in confining them so closely, not one of them would reach Lisbon alive, and that the disease which would certainly be generated among them, would as certainly be communicated to the ship's company.

"Those Jesuits who had previously been sent to Lisbon as prisoners, were cast into prison, and never heard of more, till the king's death and the disgrace of Pombal; when, after a confinement of eighteen years, they were set at liberty. The others, as they arrived in the Tagus, were transferred to other ships, not being permitted to set foot on shore, nor to communicate with friend or kinsman; they were then sent to the Mediterranean, landed upon the Papal states, and there turned adrift."—*Southey's Hist. of Brazil*, vol. iii. p. 546.

"Fifty-three of them were embarked from Pernambuco in a ship which had belonged to the Company, being for the use of the provincial to cross the Atlantic, and go from port to port in

years afterwards, shared the same fate: and the conduct of the Spanish government towards the men to whom they were so deeply indebted, was worse, if possible, than that of the Portuguese.

This was not the only injury which Brazil sustained at the hands of this minister. Hitherto, the Portuguese colonies had been, in a great measure, exempted from that complicated system of restriction and monopoly under which the Spanish settlements groaned. But, under the administration of the Marquis de Pombal, Portugal exhibited the singular spectacle of a nation beginning to adopt an exploded system, at the very time when every other people was abandoning it, and studying to remedy the evils which it had occasioned. This system was that of exclusive companies which Pombal carried to such an extent as to subject to them even port-wine, the staple commodity of the kingdom. Extending it to Brazil, he subjected to an exclusive company the trade of the northern provinces of Maranham, Para, and Pernambuco. The regulations of this company were, in some respects, of a nature peculiarly preposterous. Ignorant of the limits which bound the authority of sovereigns in commercial affairs, the court of Lisbon ordained that the shares in this company's stock should bear a certain price, and, in order to enforce this regulation, that they should be a legal tender of payment. The consequence was, that both the credit and the commerce of the company declined;

the performance of his visitation. It had been seized for the crown, with the rest of their property: and was now, for the apparent purpose of adding to their humiliation, employed as a transport, in which they were to be conveyed as convicts. They were treated with extreme cruelty upon the voyage: when they where suffering the most painful thirst, the captain would not allow, even to the dying, an additional drop of water to moisten their lips; nor would he permit them the consolation of receiving the last sacrament in death. Five of them died under this inhuman usage."—*Ibid.* vol. iii. p. 542.

the number of vessels employed in the trade sunk from thirteen or fourteen to four or five; and the ministry who succeeded Pombal, repealing his obnoxious measures, restored things to their former footing.

In 1762, a war broke out between England and France and Spain, in which Portugal sided with this country. The first act of hostility in the western hemisphere, was the seizure of the Portuguese settlement of Colonia, in the Plata, by Zeballos, the Spanish governor of Buenos Ayres. Gomez Freyre, the governor of Rio de Janeiro, had despatched to its assistance a squadron consisting chiefly of English privateers, commanded by Captain Macnamara, an Irishman.* It arrived too late to prevent the capture; but Macnamara had nearly succeeded in silencing the batteries, when his ship took fire, and himself and three-fourths of his crew were drowned.† The other ships were enabled, by the negligence of the Spaniards, to refit and return to Rio. This was the most remarkable action of the war beyond the Atlantic, and the first in which the English distinguished themselves in the defence of Brazil. The following year peace was concluded, and Colonia reverted to the Portuguese. In the same year, the Conde da Cunha, on being appointed to the viceroyalty of Brazil, was instructed to fix his residence at Rio de Janeiro, which, being nearer to the mines and to the settlements on the Plata, had become of greater importance than Bahia, and presented a more secure and better defended port. It has ever since been the seat of government.

* Penrose the poet served as lieutenant in one of the privateers.

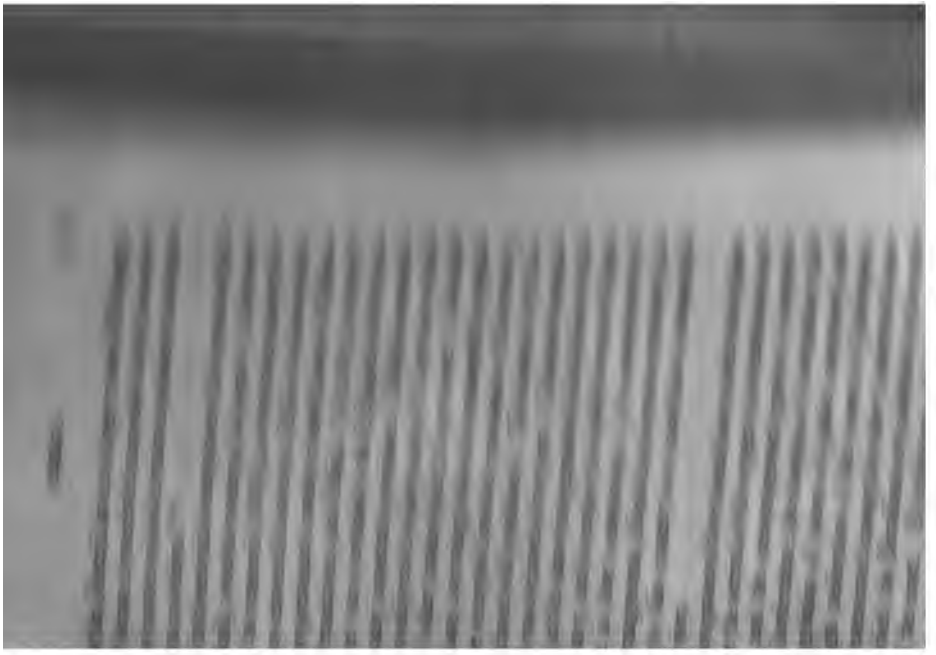
† "A good swimmer took Macnamara on his back, and made for shore: his strength began to fail; and it is said that the captain, when he perceived this, gave him his sword, bade him look to his own preservation, then let go his hold and sunk."—*Southey's Hist. of Brazil*, vol. iii. p. 562.

rom this period down t
ly of Portugal t Br
composed chi
to extend their
anagement and
s : the enlarge
rly in the p
s to conciliate
with the Fre
the more pea
s, and extendi
of commerce.
for a short pe
ıcy in the c
valry officer
out more c
h-drawer.
of the gover
ıe produce
gents was to
Geraes, and
But the c
matured
ed, and
uring the
Europe w
ın a sta
ptoms
ıe spirit
ty with
Port
which
ranches."

Though
time
ceeded
he prov

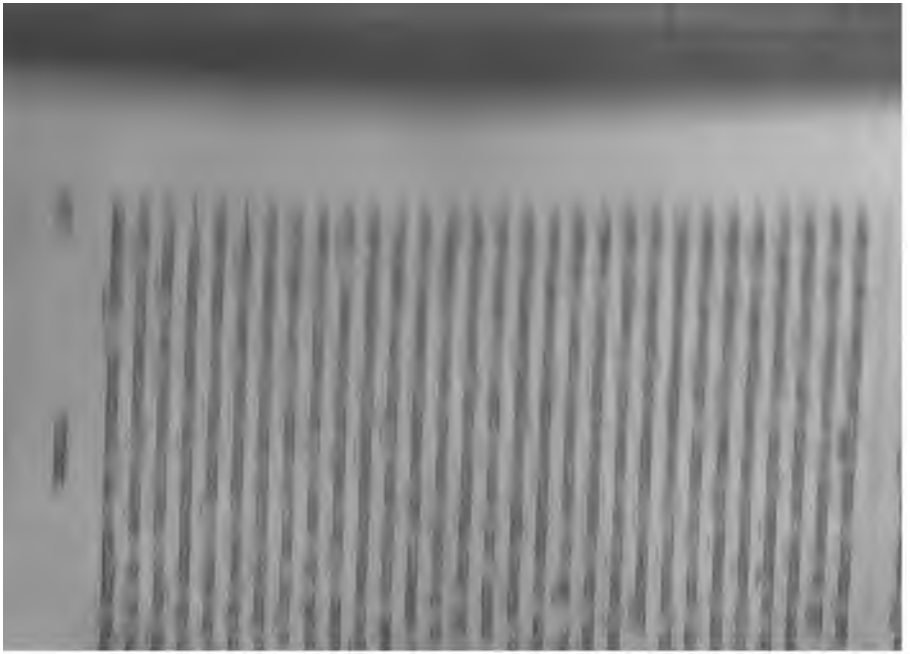
towards the Brazilians, had, it seems, been effac
more recent and less pardonable injuries rec
from the Spaniards, and the Portuguese were now
comed as liberators. After a short struggle, they
sessed themselves of the reductions, which, not
standing the endeavours of the Spanish, by for
by treaty to regain them, have ever since been ann
to Brazil.

In 1807, the French army under Marshal Jun
vaded Portugal, with the design of seizing the
family of Portugal. The Prince Regent had
every means, and had submitted to the most humi
ing concessions, to avert the impending storm.
Napoleon had resolved on adding the Peninsula t
empire. Sir Sidney Smith at that time comma
an English squadron at the mouth of the Tagus;
when, on the 29th of November, the vanguard of
French army appeared on the heights above Lis
then, and not till then, the prince determined
emigration to Brazil. Every thing of value w
could be transported, was hastily put on board the
and the French troops arrived only in time to wit
its departure. They entered Lisbon on the follo
day. The prince, after a prosperous voyage, arr
at Bahia on the 25th of January, 1808, where he
received with the most enthusiastic expressions of
Some of his advisers wished him to stop here; but,
a praiseworthy firmness, he adhered to the resolu
he had taken, and after spending a month in that
sailed to Rio Janeiro, where he arrived on the 7t
March. Thus was realized, under the impulsio
necessity arising from circumstances which it was
possible to foresee, the bold measure first conceive
Pombal, of transferring the seat of the monarchy
Europe to Brazil. From this moment may be d
the virtual independence of the western em
"The removal of the court demonstrated," M. Bo
champ remarks, "that Portugal stood in need of



[illegible] nothing [illegible] new [illegible]
[illegible] of the [illegible] shall [illegible]
[illegible] Brazil, [illegible]
[illegible] [illegible]
[illegible] [illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible] [illegible]
[illegible] [illegible]
[illegible] [illegible]



[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

be attached to the old order of things; and the regent shared in their unpopularity. Disgusted more and more with this unhappy posture of affairs, with the insubordination of the army, and the intrigues of the junta imposed upon him by the cortes, the prince solicited his recall to Europe: he was detained in Brazil only by the engagement he had contracted with the king, to remain there for the sake of preserving it, in case of a separation from the mother country, to the Braganza dynasty. "At length," says M. de Beauchamp, "the Brazilians were disarmed by this noble conduct: they recognised his activity, his beneficence, his assiduity in the affairs of government; and the habitual feelings of affection and respect for the house of Braganza, which had been for a moment laid asleep by distrust, were rewakened with increased strength. To these was joined an almost idolatrous sentiment of attachment for the virtues and splendid as well as amiable qualities of the young Archduchess Leopoldina, the daughter of the Emperor of Austria, and the beloved wife of the regent."

From the hour of his arrival in Europe, the king had only been the too docile instrument of the cortes; and he found himself under the necessity of lending his authority to a constitution which affected to treat his Brazilian subjects as mere colonists. By this step he took part with Portugal against Brazil, and a rupture between the two countries became every day more inevitable. On the fourth of October, 1821, a premature attempt was made at Rio, to proclaim the regent emperor; but it was suppressed, and was followed by no other immediate result than the temporary arrest of some subordinate agents. The provinces were not ripe for so hazardous a movement; and possibly, the object of those who originated it, was merely to ascertain their disposition. However this might be, the mere imperfect demonstration gave confidence

and increased influence to the regent, who now felt that, in case of a rupture, his only way was to put himself at the head of the Brazilian party, since, by joining the Portuguese interest, he would not merely precipitate the definitive separation of the colony from the mother country, but would render inevitable the adoption of a republican form of government.

Almost at the very moment that the prince was refusing the imperial crown, the cortes of Lisbon, blinded by a selfish policy, or hurried on by passion, were passing their decrees of the 29th of September; by one of which (No 124), Brazil was distributed into provincial governments, communicating with the minister at Lisbon, and the superior tribunals were suppressed: by the other (No 125), the prince regent was recalled to Portugal, and on his return, was to be sent on his travels, incognito, through Spain, France, and England, accompanied with a retinue nominated by the cortes. Such was the sagacious plan of the constitution-makers of the Peninsula; and it is impossible, remarks M. la Beaumelle, to conceive of any legislative enactments more exquisitely adopted to defeat the intentions of their framers. "At the same time that they deeply irritated the natives by the parcelling out of the kingdom, they gave umbrage to all persons in office, a great proportion of whom were Europeans, by the suppression of the court and the tribunals; and what was still more offensive, they treated with gross disrespect the heir to the throne, in imposing upon him as a duty, a tour, which, if advisable, ought to have been voluntary, and in assigning him an escort whom he could look upon only as so many spies. A centre was given to the emancipation, by the offer thus made to a prince of high spirit and resolution, of a country entirely ready to defend him."

These decrees reached Rio Janeiro on the 10th of

Dec. Orders were issued for the election of the junta who were to be installed two months after (the 10th Feb.), and to whom the prince was to consign the government. He himself made preparations for his departure; but the public sentiment opposed his determination. No sooner were the decrees of the cortes made known, than the greatest fermentation was excited in the capital. The cortes had reckoned upon the Portuguese regiment stationed there, to give effect to their orders, but the Brazilians were not to be so easily intimidated. The three provinces of St Paul, Rio Janeiro, and Minas Geraes, who were afterwards joined by that of Rio Grande do Sul, presented to the prince the most spirited addresses. The president of the municipal deputation of Rio Janeiro expressed himself in these bold and almost menacing terms: "The departure of your royal highness from the states of Brazil, will be the decree that will seal for ever the independence of this kingdom." That independence would in that case have involved nothing short of its distribution into federal republics, for its recolonization had become impossible. There remained but one single tie between the two countries, and that would have been dissolved by the departure of the regent. Aware of this, Don Pedro resolved to disobey the sinister mandate of the cortes, and he signified his resolution to remain, to the municipal senate of Rio Janeiro, in these words: "Since it is for the good of all, and for the general happiness of the nation, I have decided—tell the people that I remain." This notification, which was made public on the 9th of Jan. 1822, was received with unanimous acclamations, and produced the greatest enthusiasm. The Portuguese troops alone observed a sullen silence, and a report was spread, that they were about to put the decree of the cortes in execution by open force, and carry off the prince. This report increased the popular commotion. At the moment when the agitation was at its height, the Portu-

e general, Avilez, threw up the command of the ient, and demanded to be allowed to return to pe. This step was suspected to be only a feint, pretence for declining the further orders of the re-

On the night after the 11th instant, the troops up arms, either to choose a new commander, or ain their old one. On learning this, the Bras immediately followed their example. In a few , the camp of Saint Anne was covered with natroops and a multitude of armed inhabitants. sides had provided themselves with artillery, and seemed on the point of an engagement. But the of an entire population under arms, cooled the ige of the European troops: they offered terms, 1 was admitting themselves to be conquered; and, pitulating, were sent to Praja Grande, on the side of the bay, where preparations were made eir embarkation. There, however, recovering the first emotion which had led them to give up eld without striking a blow, they assumed afresh nacing attitude, declaring, that they would remain aja Grande till the arrival of an expedition that xpected from Portugal. There was no time to the state of things was most critical. The prince out some armed vessels, summoned reinforce- from Saint Paul and Minas Geraes, and blockade little European army* at once by sea and by

Putting himself on board the commander's ves-

of the arrival of another European fleet, conveying fresh troops. This armament consisted of several men of war, among others, the John the Sixth, on board which was the commander Maximilian, with orders to bring Don Pedro to Lisbon. His instructions were to place himself, on his arrival at Rio, under the orders of the prince. "The only order I have to give you," said the prince, "is to go back;"—and the troops were not suffered to land. The whole of the expedition, with the exception of a frigate which the prince detained, set sail in consequence for Europe.* The inhabitants of Pernambuco had already, before they knew of what had transpired in the capital, expelled all the Portuguese troops from that province.

In transmitting an account of these important events to the king his father, Don Pedro represented that it was the wish of the provinces to preserve in Brazil a centre of government, but subject, both as to legislation and the general administration, to the king and the cortes. The latter, alarmed by the tidings of these proceedings, seemed at length to perceive the risk they had run of losing Brazil altogether, and they began to retrace their steps. Eight days only before the receipt of the prince's despatches, they had suppressed the last central establishment which remained beyond the seas —the Marine Academy of Rio Janeiro. On the 6th of March, they came to a resolution, that further discussion respecting the constitution, so far as regarded Brazil, should be suspended till the deputies from that country had been heard. Four days after, it was determined that the Academy should remain at Rio Janeiro. Then a report was made by a commission, which amounted to a humble apology: it proposed to suspend the departure of the prince and the establish-

* On his return to Lisbon, the commander was brought to trial for having followed his instructions too literally, and was immediately degraded.

n two delegations of the executive power.—
had been but a little before positively refused,
ground that the executive power was incommu-
, and incapable of being delegated. These in-
proposals were meant as a lure: the division of
into two parts, would have been equivalent to
mission to the cortes, for it would have deprived
intry of the power of any effectual resistance.
chile they were deliberating on the banks of the
, they were acting in Brazil. Minas Geraes and
ptaincy of Espiritu Santo adhered openly to the
ian system, and Pernambuco had already com-
itself too far to leave any doubt of its concur-

The movement was universal: all the south-
ovinces, the population of which forms the ma-
of that of the whole nation, already styled the u-
, in their reports, the Allied Provinces. It only
ied for the prince to put himself at the head of
nfederacy. Perceiving that the time was now
to give his operations the sanction of a sort of
ian representation, yet, not being able, consist-
with the system of union he had resolved to pre-
to invest this body with legislative authority, he
orders that every province should choose one or
attorneys-general, who should collectively form

fused to subscribe to the constitution, and quitted l
bon; "thus," remarks M. la Beaumelle, "brea
in the hands of the rulers of Portugal, the fetters t
had forged for Brazil." The province of Bahia
in an energetic appeal, and declared in favour o
Brazilian government. This document was mad
subject of much miserable quibbling, the legali
the signatures being questioned, and the assembly
sed to the order of the day. The next day, all th
habitants of Bahia resident at Lisbon, sent in thei
herence to the wishes of their countrymen.

In the mean time, the people of Rio Janeiro
on the 13th of May, proclaimed the prince perp
protector of Brazil, the title to be hereditary.
had accepted it; it was one that served to recall
which the heroic Fernandez Vieira had assu
when he recovered Brazil from the Dutch. At
the Brazilians had confined their demands t
equality of co-operation in the legislative pow
the cortes, a local delegation of the executive p
central magistracies, and a free trade. But
they asked for a separate legislature; wishing on
an alliance between the two nations under the pr
tion and direction of the monarch, the sole bo
union between them. The cortes had sunk into
discredit: all parties, widely as they differed on
points, were unanimous in their opposition to
union with Portugal. It is generally the case,
the intestine divisions of a country are laid aslee
a foreign dispute. Already, before the provi
delegates could be assembled, who were to form
council of state, the local authorities had dema
a constituent and legislative assembly; and
council of state itself, at its first sitting, declare
own incompetency, and called for the same con
tion. The prince acceded to this by his decr
the 3d of June, deeming it indispensable to streng

illan union by an elective assembly.* This more necessary, as Brazil was on the point no longer represented in the national con- The deputies to the cortes had been in- to stipulate, 1. That Brazil should have a epresentation for herself; 2. That the coun- d always be governed by the next heir to ı, being of age, when the king should be in and 3. that the seat of government should ately in each of the two kingdoms. These were peremptorily rejected in the sitting h of July, and a new order was passed for n of the prince to Portugal. The Abbé ons is reported to have said on this occa- t if the Brazilians were no longer willing others, they should be slaves; and he offered es as chaplain to the army that should be ıbdue them. But all these measures, marked vere by haughtiness, and breathing menaces art of the weaker party, served only to de- hasten energetic measures of resistance on of the stronger one. Mutual recriminations and the cortes, aping the Roman senate ld the field in which Hannibal was en- disposed of Brazil as if that kingdom had ı in their hands. On the 19th of Septem- as resolved at Lisbon, that the convocation Brazilian assembly was null and void; that rnment of Rio Janeiro was illegal; that the of the prince should cease from that time; should be bound to return to Europe ur months, on pain of forfeiting his he- rights; and lastly, that the ministry, and anders, naval and military, should be re-

word *assembly* was adopted from the French, to g the word *cortes*, which had become odious to the

sponsible for their obedience to the intrusive government.

What was the result? A year had not elapsed from the date of this imprudent and impotent edict, when the assembly of Brazil was installed, the government of the prince regent had been changed into the imperial government, his ministers were executing his orders, and every commander had submitted to his authority; while, at Lisbon, those who had passed these iniquitous decrees against him, had been unable either to maintain their power, or to secure themselves an asylum in the land which they had governed.

Up to the passing of this last decree, the Brazilians had not seriously thought of effecting a separation, how desirable soever it might have appeared to many persons. But now, all the provinces became united in a wish for independence: Bahia even united with the rest; and Monte Video, which had hitherto been considered as an independent state, solicited a re-union with Brazil. A few days after, a squadron sent from Portugal with all the disposable troops which the government had the means of transporting across the seas, arrived at Bahia, and took possession of the city; but General Madeira, the commander, was unable to extend his conquest beyond the walls: the whole province and even the islands in the bay remained loyal to the union. It was the same with the provinces of Para and Maranham, beyond the walls of their capitals. At length, the two countries were fairly placed, by the infatuation of the cortes, in a state of open war. In the last moments of their political existence, affecting to carry things with a higher hand than ever, they shortened the term allowed the prince regent for his return, threatening him with exclusion from the throne of Portugal in case of disobedience; prohibited the exportation to Brazil of all

d ammunition, subjecting all foreign vessels uld be taken with such stores on board to ion; and put in blockade (upon paper only,) its twelve thousand leagues of coast. Be- e Portuguese troops at Bahia, who were d by the militia of that and the neighbour- inces, there was at Monte Video a Portu- arrison, who, having been formed into a de- ; body, with an elective council, were wait- for the orders of the cortes to give up the nich had cost so long a contest, not to the f Brazil, but either to the Spaniards or to ernment of Buenos Ayres. Still, the Bra- nad hitherto recognised the authority of the it was the legislative decrees of the cortes it they had resisted, denying the compe- their authority; and the king was repre- s the prisoner of a faction. Similar lan- vas used in the cortes with regard to the or whom the highest respect was professed, oo was considered as held in captivity by a courtiers. Now, however, that the disputes the two kingdoms had come to an open rup- l it was necessary to repel force by force, it impossible that the two crowns should remain ninally on the same head.

manifesto dated August 1, 1822, which was a appeal to the people of Brazil, the prince charges the cortes of Lisbon with having d all the established forms, and changed all tutions of the monarchy; after which, it ' Portugal cannot compel us to [illegible] in em of shame and degradation, without vio- e very principles on which she founds her olution and her right of changing her political ns,—without destroying the bases on which t her new rights, the inalienable rights of

the people."* The southern provinces of Brazil are complimented with having withstood alike the republican desires and dispositions which had manifested themselves in some quarters, and the seductive examples of some neighbouring nations. "It is they who have preserved the monarchy in the great American continent, and maintained inviolate the acknowledged rights of the august house of Braganza."

In a manifesto† addressed to foreign nations, dated the 6th of August, containing a formal declaration of the independence of Brazil, the prince regent, after entering into a lengthened detail of the tyrannical measures of the cortes, adverts to the supposed durance and bondage in which his august father was held by the dominant faction, styling him a state-prisoner and a captive, and solemnly protests that he still looks forward to the re-union of all the parts of the monarchy under one sole sovereign; with which reserve he swears to defend the legitimate

* This interesting state-paper commences with the following paragraph: "Brazilians, the time for deceiving mankind is past. The governments which would found their power on the pretended ignorance of the people, or on old errors and obsolete abuses, will see the colossus of their greatness fall from the fragile basis on which it was once erected. It has been owing to their not recognising this truth, that the Cortes of Lisbon have compelled the southern provinces of Brazil to shake off their yoke. It is because I have respected it, that I now see all Brazil united round me, asking for the defence of their rights, and the maintenance of their liberty and independence. Under these circumstances, *I owe it to you to speak the truth.* Hear me."

† In this manifesto it is distinctly stated, that Portugal had offered to cede to France a part of the province of Para, on condition that that power should furnish troops and transports for the reduction of Brazil; and that proposals had been made to England, with the same views, to give perpetuity to the commercial treaty of 1810, and even to extend it by additional advantages.

and the future constitution of Brazil. There
room to suspect the sincerity of these profes-
on the part of the prince himself, with whatso-
reserve they might be put forth at this time by
visers.

was three months after the date of these mani-
s, that the municipal senate of Rio Janeiro,
extraordinary sitting, held September 7, came
resolution of sending a circular address to all
ther municipal senates of Brazil, in which the
t necessity was insisted upon of investing his
highness the prince regent and perpetual pro-
of Brazil, as soon as possible, with the effec-
exercise of all the attributes of the executive,
, under a free government, ought to belong to
nstitutional king ;—a necessity rising out of the
ion of the country relative to internal as well
foreign enemies, who were making war upon
rritory of Brazil. Soon after this circular had
privately issued, and favourable answers had
received from the provinces of Minas and Saint
and the captaincy of Espiritu Santo, fresh
tches from Lisbon arrived, containing the offi-
onfirmation of the reports which had agitated
ountry, relative to the order for recalling the
, and the expedition with which the cortes
ened to chastise the rebels of Brazil. This
gence produced such a burst of public feeling
io, that, according to the official statement put
by the senate, the prince would have been at
proclaimed constitutional emperor of Brazil by
eople, had not the senate taken the precau-
o calm the public impatience by its edict of the
of September, in which it was announced, that
roclamation should be made with due solemnity
e 12th of the ensuing month. On that day,
dingly, it took place in the provinces of Rio
ro, Minas, Saint Paul, and Espiritu Santo:

at Villa Rica and Queluz it was made on the 30th of September. On the first of December, the coronation of the new emperor of Brazil was solemnized, when his majesty, Pedro I., took the oath to defend with his sword the country, the people, and the constitution, *if* it should be worthy of Brazil and of its sovereign. On assuming the imperial style, Don Pedro, however, neither demanded nor obtained the least augmentation either of his revenue or of his powers; and in his speech at the opening of the constituent assembly on the 3d of May, 1823, he professes, that the title conferred on him on the 13th of May preceding, of perpetual protector of Brazil, was still more flattering to his heart than that of emperor.

The first act of the imperial government was to summon a constituent and legislative assembly, which was to meet on the 26th of February, at Rio; but the opening of the chambers was subsequently postponed by the emperor till the 3d of May, the anniversary of the discovery of Brazil by the navigator Cabral. The act of adjournment, together with the order for the suppression of all secret societies, issued soon after the accession of D. Pedro, gave some dissatisfaction to the democratical party, who discovered their jealousy of the emperor in the first sittings of the assembly, by raising a clamour against the form of the oath of allegiance, by which obedience was professed to the will of the emperor. At Rio, however, the popularity of the court continued to increase; and such was the ardour of the loyalty, or the public spirit of the citizens, that they spontaneously voted the annual sum of 400,000 francs for the augmentation of the Brazilian navy. In the mean time, Bahia, the second city in the empire, was surrounded and closely pressed by 20,000 Brazilian troops, chiefly volunteers, under the command of Colonel Jose Joaquim da Silva Lima. Towards the end of June, a council of war was held, in which it

was determined by the officers of the Portuguese army, to abandon the city, and make their escape, if possible, by sea. Measures were accordingly taken for its evacuation with the utmost haste; the gold and silver of the churches were carried off, as well as the public chest, and, in a word, Bahia was pillaged. The troops having embarked, the squadron prepared to set sail on the night of the 2d of July, together with all the other vessels in the harbour, which were laden with troops and passengers. The latter, fearing rough treatment from the Brazilians, reckoned upon repairing to different parts of Europe and Spanish America. The bar of Bahia was blockaded by the squadron of Rio Janeiro, consisting of sixty sail, under the command of Lord Cochrane, who had hoisted his flag on board the Don Pedro. The enemy's fleet consisted of eighty sail, including twenty men of war. The Portuguese general Madeira was on board the Don Joam VI., together with all the plunder of Bahia. Taking advantage of a favourable wind and the extreme width of the road, the fugitives contrived to escape the Brazilian fleet; but Lord Cochrane no sooner learned that they had slipped out, than he set sail in pursuit, overtook part of the armament between Bahia and Pernambuco, and succeeded in capturing several vessels belonging to the convoy. He continued the pursuit for three days. General Silva da Lima entered the city on the same day, the 2d of July, and the imperial government was peaceably established there without any bloodshed or opposition. Para and St Louis in Maranham, which still held out, surrendered to the Brazilian squadron under Lord Cochrane, on the 28th of August, for which, and other eminent services, his lordship was created by the emperor Marquis of Maranham.

On the 30th of June, the emperor met with a severe fall from his horse, which broke two or three of his

ribs. The democratic faction took advantage of his indisposition, to send both to his majesty and the prime minister threatening letters, purporting that if the latter did not give in his resignation, his life, and even that of the emperor, would not be safe. This attempt of the party to succeed by intimidation totally failed; but they had gained sufficient strength, in the assembly to command a majority, on the 29th of July, when the question of the absolute *veto* was discussed, without which royal prerogative the monarchy would have been only a name. Notwithstanding this decision, however, the emperor had spirit and firmness enough to declare, that he would never put in execution any acts which had not obtained his express sanction. The assembly, on the other hand, seemed determined to carry their point; and on the 9th of August, the emperor thought it necessary to issue a proclamation, in which, while he declared his abhorrence of all despotism, whether that of one or of many, he expressed his determination not tamely to give up his rights and see the kingdom virtually reduced to a democracy.* Matters seemed drawing to a crisis. But the royalists were a majority in the empire, and Don Pedro had on his side the ar-

* This well-drawn-up paper concludes with the following paragraph. "Believe, then, neither those who flatter the people, nor those who flatter the monarch. Both are actuated only by selfish motives, and under the mask, whether of liberalism or of servilism, wish only to advance their own interests on the ruins of their country. The times in which we live, are full of sad examples. Let what has befallen foreign countries serve you as a lesson. Brazilians, confide in your emperor and perpetual protector. He desires no power that does not belong to him, but he will not suffer that to be usurped which is his right, and which is indispensable to enable him to secure your welfare. Let us await the constitution of the empire, and hope that it may be worthy for us. May the supreme Arbiter of the universe grant us union and tranquillity, strength and perseverance, and the great work of our liberty and our independence will be accomplished."

my, the fleet, the marine regiments, and an immense majority of Brazilians.

The month of November brought with it the triumph of the imperial authority. The ministry had been changed. Some turbulent members of the assembly having brought forward several charges against the new ministers, a warm discussion ensued, and the fermentation became so great out of doors, that the public were divided into two parties. The sitting of the 11th of November was still more tumultuous. The emperor, to give the more freedom of discussion to the assembly, had withdrawn the troops from the city; but the anarchy which ensued, attained at last so formidable a height, that the government despatched 400 cavalry and infantry, with four pieces of artillery, to surround the assembly, and dissolve the sitting by force. Six or eight deputies were arrested. Don Pedro then mounted his horse, and rode through the city, where he was received with general acclamations. All the houses were illuminated, and public tranquillity was completely re-established. A proclamation was immediately issued, in which the emperor promised to give the nation a constitution that should be worthy of himself and the people of Brazil.

A new legislative (but not constituent) assembly was summoned by a decree of the 17th of November, and in the mean time, the rough draft of the constitution, framed by a special commission, and approved by the emperor, was circulated throughout Brazil. Registers were opened in the capital and in all the provinces to receive the votes, approving or disapproving, of the citizens. On the 25th of March, 1824, the suffiages of the greater part of the provinces having been collected, the emperor himself, in the face of his people, took the oath to observe the charter which he had just granted, and which is now to be considered as the fundamental and definitive law of the new empire.*

* For the above sketch of the history of Brazil, we have

We have now brought down the history of Brazil to the era of its definitive organisation as an independent empire, under its present constitutional sovereign. It is not our province to speculate on the possibilities of the future. One thing, however, seems certain, that in no event can Brazil again be brought under the dominion of Portugal. If it could be imagined that the emperor was capable of betraying the interests of his subjects, (for the conquest of Brazil by any force that Portugal could send out, is a moral impossibility,) the only result of such measures would be to produce a dismemberment of the empire. The attempt to unite the two crowns on the same head, could not, it may safely be affirmed, eventually succeed. How far this immense empire may be capable or incapable of holding together ultimately, composed as it is of parts in some respects so heterogeneous and remote from the seat of government, time will shew. The southern provinces have always manifested an attachment to the monarchical principle and a disposition to coalesce with Rio Janeiro. Bahia, the more ancient capital and an archbishopric, might seem to have rival pretensions to become the seat of government; and there, perhaps, some seeds of jealousy may still lurk. But it is in the more northerly provinces, in particular Pernambuco, Para, and Maranham, that the republican spirit has shewn itself the strongest; and it is with regard to these, that it seems the most problematical, whether Brazil shall long remain an undivided empire, having for its centre the present seat of government at Rio Janeiro.

The high degree of interest attaching to this rising empire in the New World, both in a political and a

been chiefly indebted, in the earlier part, to Southey's History of Brazil, in 3 vols. 4to. The more recent facts are given chiefly on the authority of the documents printed by MM. la Beaumelle and de Beauchamp in their pamphlets already referred to.

ıercial point of view, has induced us to occupy so
a space with its history, which is comparatively
ttle known, and some general acquaintance with
ı is requisite in order to understand its present
ion and relations. We now proceed to take a
al survey of the country itself.

NATURAL HISTORY, CLIMATE, &c.

e general aspect of Brazil, as first viewed from
a, is rugged and mountainous, but, on a nearer
ach, its appearance is highly picturesque and ro-
c, presenting mountains crowned with gigantic
s, and valleys clothed with perpetual verdure. The
gradually rises as it recedes from the coast, till,
very great distance from the shore, it reaches the
t of from 5 to 6000 feet above the level of the
This elevated ridge, which has been termed the
lian Andes, stretching from about the tenth to
irty-second degree of latitude, runs nearly parallel
coast, with its steepest side towards the sea :
dually slopes towards the interior of the country,
:e it afterwards rises again by a gentle ascent to-
the west, till it attains a height varying from 3
)0 feet, and then loses itself in those sandy de-
called Campos Parexis, which occupy a large
n of the central regions of South America.
: deserts appear to stretch round the sources of
'apajos, and part of the head waters of the Me-
Near the confines of this barren tract, the land
first into hills, and then into chains of mountains,
are considered as the highest in Brazil. Here,
of the tributary streams of the Maranham, the
guay, and other great rivers that ultimately lose
elves in the Atlantic, have their rise. These
:ains not only abound in mines of copper and of
ıut conceal, besides, rich mines of gold, diamonds,
:her precious stones. From this elevated group,

different chains are prolonged towards the south, in a direction parallel with the coast, under the name of *Serro des Emeraldas* and *Serro do Frio*. Another branch, proceeding from the same plateau, follows a similar direction towards the south: while a third chain, under the name of Matto Grosso, bends to the north-west towards the central plain, and forms the dividing ridge between the waters which flow southward into the Paraguay and the Parana on one side, and those which flow northward into the Toccantines and the Chingu on the other. Between the Parana and the Paraguay, an extensive chain of mountains intervenes, running from north to south, which diverges, at its termination, into other ranges running from east to west. Various other groups skirt, for a great distance, the banks of the river Toccantines; while another range, one of the most considerable in Brazil, extends towards the northern coasts, and forms a natural division between the provinces of Maranham and Pernambuco.

The vast extent of coast, from the estuary of the mighty Amazons to that of the Plata, is singularly deficient in capes and bays. For more than fifteen degrees of longitude, from point la Tijioca to Cape St Roque, the shore stretches nearly from east to west without any considerable promontory, and scarcely an inlet of importance, except that in which the town of Maranham stands. From Cape St Roque to Cape St Augustine, an extent of about four degrees of latitude, the line of coast is nearly due north and south. It then bends to the south-west, and forms a large sweep before it reaches Cape Frio, in lat 23° S., in which the small promontory on which Bahia stands, and the bay to the west of that city, are almost the only points that deserve mention. South of Cape Frio, the coast runs nearly west, till it reaches the bay of Rio Janeiro, which forms one of the most complete harbours in the world. Though narrow at its entrance, it extends several miles in-

ry, and is finely sprinkled with islands. Anr of nearly the same size washes a part of rn confines of the same province, and o coast extends more towards the south, nting any other river of consequence. Mr was led, on an examination of the head of nde, to think that the original line of coast e west of the Lake Mirim and the Lag a , to the village of Santa Maria, near Rio ma. ail to the east of the line is made ground. sand driven to the ocean

ajestic river, which is formerly considered orthern boundary of Brazil, known as the Amazon or Amazons, the Maranham r or Maragnon, and in Guiana, is unse the largest river in the world. It is formr large lakes, the Parime, which passes lake Laurocoka, in Peru, and the Rio Negro, Cayaba formed by streams which have their the Andes, and the Rio Negro, which has its rise in the mountains of Parime, in Guiana, and empties itself into the Amazon. The Rio Negro is navigable for vessels of a considerable burden, and is remarkable for the quantity of fish which it produces. The Rio Madeira, which is formed by the junction of the Beni and Mamore, and the Tocantins, which rises in the province of Goyaz, and empties itself into the Para, are also navigable for vessels of a considerable burden. The Rio Para, which is formed by the junction of the Tocantins and Araguay, is navigable for vessels of the largest burden. The Rio Francisco, which rises in the province of Minas Geraes, and empties itself into the Atlantic ocean, is navigable for vessels of a considerable burden. The Rio Grande, which rises in the province of Minas Geraes, and empties itself into the Atlantic ocean, is navigable for vessels of a considerable burden. The Rio Paraguay, which rises in the province of Matto Grosso, and empties itself into the Rio Parana, is navigable for vessels of a considerable burden. The Rio Parana, which rises in the province of Minas Geraes, and empties itself into the Atlantic ocean, is navigable for vessels of a considerable burden. The Rio Uruguay, which rises in the province of Minas Geraes, and empties itself into the Atlantic ocean, is navigable for vessels of a considerable burden. The Rio Tocantins, which rises in the province of Goyaz, and empties itself into the Para, is navigable for vessels of a considerable burden. The Rio Madeira, which is formed by the junction of the Beni and Mamore, and empties itself into the Amazon, is navigable for vessels of a considerable burden. The Rio Negro, which has its rise in the mountains of Parime, in Guiana, and empties itself into the Amazon, is navigable for vessels of a considerable burden. The Rio Cayaba, formed by streams which have their rise in the Andes, and empties itself into the Rio Negro, is navigable for vessels of a considerable burden. The Rio Laurocoka, in Peru, and empties itself into the Rio Negro, is navigable for vessels of a considerable burden. The Rio Parime, which passes lake Laurocoka, in Peru, and empties itself into the Rio Negro

this river and its tributaries, and they swarm wit ligators and water-serpents.

The principal of the streams which fall int river Amazons, is the Rio Madera, or River of ests, formed by the union of several streams is from the eastern slope of the Andes on the borde Peru, which flowing towards the E. and N.E., before they reach the 10th degree of S. lati Their confluent waters, after several magnificent reach the level country; whence the Madera rol a vast body of water for a course of about 2000 forming, for a great part of the distance, a northern boundary of the Brazilian dominions, and the Amazons in lat 3° 24′ 18″ S. Nearly paral this, and flowing in the same direction, but fi eastward, are the Tapajos, the Chingu, and the cantines, all rising from the same central regions former two in the province of Matto Grosso, the in the captaincy of Goyaz, in about lat 19° S. Tapajos takes a northerly course for more than miles between the Chingu and the Medera, (its course being computed to be 900 miles in len and falls into the Maranham in lat 2° 24′ 50′ long 55° W. The Chingu has a course of miles, the navigation of which is frequently interr by cataracts. The Toccantines, the largest o three, and almost equal to the mighty Amazons is joined by the Araguaya in lat 6°; and the stream, after a course of 300 miles, falls int southern estuary of the Amazons in lat 1° 4(about twenty leagues W. of the city of Para, whole length is upwards of 900 miles.

The great range of mountains which skirt shore, prevents any rivers from attaining the immediately, except such as spring from the ea side of that ridge; but several noble rivers of th terior, by a circuitous sweep, mingle their water the Atlantic. The Paraiba discharges itself

ıe northern coast in lat 6° 57′ S., long 42° W. The
lio Francisco, which has its rise about the 20th de-
ree of S. latitude, after running northward for a con-
iderable distance along the great longitudinal valley
t the foot of the Brazilian Andes, turns at length to
ıe east, and, separating Pernambuco from Seregippe,
nters the sea in about the 11th parallel of S. latitude,
ompleting a course of upwards of 1000 miles. This
the largest river of Brazil that is unconnected either
ith the Amazons or the Plata. One of the three
lio Grandes rises in the province of Minas Geraes,
id, after a long course to the N. E., falls into the
tlantic a few miles N. of Porto Seguro, in lat 15°
5′ S. Another Rio Grande waters the province of
lahia, and joins the Rio Francisco. A third, which
ives name to the province of Rio Grande do Sul,
aches the Atlantic about the 32d parallel of S. lati-
ıde. Besides these, the Rio Doce, which separates
Espiritu Santo from Seguro, the Rio dos Ilheos, and
me others of less note, find their way from the west-
n ridge to the sea.

The immense estuary of La Plata is the great
ain for all the central waters south of the tributary
reams of the Amazons. The land which divides
ıe waters of the Amazons from those of the Plata,
ses to its greatest height between the 13th and 14th
arallels of latitude. Here the Paraguay (or the
'lata) has its rise, its sources approaching, it is said,
'ithin a few miles of those of the Tapajos, the Chin-
u, and the Toccantines, which run to the north.
'his immense river runs a southerly course of about
300 miles, assuming, after its confluence with the
arana in lat 27° 25′ S., the name of the Plata
Silver River); at Buenos Ayres, nearly 200 miles
om its mouth, it is about 30 miles broad; and, from
ape St Anthony on the one side, to Cape St Maria
ı the other, its estuary is 150 miles wide. Rocks,

sand-banks, shoals, shallows, and occasional torrent
render its navigation very difficult and dangerou
and the only port on its shores that is adapted for th
safety of ships of considerable burthen, is that
Monte Video. The Parana is formed by the a
cumulated waters of several extensive valleys. Fro
the east, it receives all the waters of the western de
clivity of the mountainous ridge which runs parall
with the coast. Its head waters approach within le
than 100 miles of the eastern shore, from which the
course is westerly into the interior, until they tu
towards the south. It flows into the Plata, on
eastern bank, about 700 miles from its mouth. T
the southward of the Parana is the Uruguay, whic
rises, Mr Luccock says, within 50 miles of the A
lantic shore; yet, its sources are nearly 6000 fe
above the level of the sea. It is composed of tw
streams which descend from the mountains, towar
the interior in lat 28° and 26° S. After collecti
various other waters, it traverses a vast extent
country, and then, winding to the south, falls into th
Plata near Buenos Ayres, completing a course
above 1000 miles. Its navigation is difficult. The
three rivers have, in the course of ages, produce
some of the most extensive alluvial plains which ex
on the face of the globe. In the rainy seasons, the
country through which they flow, is inundated to
amazing extent. Not far from Corientes, where t
Parana and the Paraguay meet at right angles, is
lake Ibera, or Ybyra (the low country), which, in
dry season, covers an extent of about 150 squa
leagues, but, about a month after the rains have co
menced in the upper country, that is, in Decembe
extends over not less than 2000 square leagues.
is formed by the waters of the Parana, but is said
communicate, at the rainy period, both with the Par
guay and the Uruguay. The lake of Xarys,
Paraguay, which lies more to the northward, is

arger: it is an expansion of the Paraguay, being manifestly formed by the channel's being too narrow to carry off the waters as they come down from the upper country. The great lake of Patos, which stretches about 150 miles nearly parallel to the coast, n the province of Rio Grande do Sul, will be noticed in another place.

A country of such immense extent, and of so diversified a surface, must of necessity be marked by great variety both of soil and climate. In the northern parts, which are situated in the centre of the torrid zone, the air of the lower tracts near the banks of the river Maranham, is sultry and oppressive; but even here, vegetation is kept in perfect vigour by the peculiar humidity of the atmosphere. In these regions there is little distinction of seasons: the ground is constantly covered with flowers, the foliage is evergreen, and the abundant dews, the shade of the forests, and the delicious coolness of the nights, are represented as giving the country the appearance of perpetual spring. Near the coast, where the trade-wind constantly blows, the beneficial effects which extend it, after having swept over the breadth of the Atlantic, are hourly experienced in the refreshing coolness it imparts to the atmosphere of these otherwise sultry regions. The northern provinces, however, frequently suffer from the want of rain during the dry season. In ascending towards the sources of the great rivers, the temperature is modified by the elevation of the ground, as well as in receding from the equator. On the Campos Parexis and other similar situations, the aridity of the soil and the reflection of the solar rays render the heat intolerable; but, within many of the elevated districts of the interior, fertile valleys are found enjoying a temperate and salubrious climate, where the vegetables and fruits of Europe are matured in the vicinity of those indi

genous to a tropical soil. Of this nature is the mate towards Minas Géraes and St Paul. Tow the southern extremity of Brazil, as well as in higher mountainous districts, the air is still colder the soil produces European grain in great perfec Brazil is generally considered healthy. The wind, indeed, passing over vast marshy forest frequently found unhealthy in the interior; but t blasts are much corrected by the influence of the matic plants which abound in the woods, and fill air with their fragrance. The northern provinces subject to heavy rains, variable winds, tornad storms, and the utmost fury of the elements; but southern regions are blessed with a settled and te rate climate, and are esteemed peculiarly salubri

As far as the soil has yet been explored, it app to be highly fertile. The whole extent of the c vated lands, however, has recently been state scarcely 20,000 square miles, which is not a hun and fiftieth part of the whole surface. The int consists, in many parts, of one continuous fores a little distance from the coast, the country, in s parts, is covered with numerous varieties of the p tree, among which is a remarkable species with l serrated, lancet-formed leaves, composed of i merable fibres, which rival silk both in fine and in strength. The sandy soils of the coast turned to account by plantations of the cocoa- which grows here thicker and taller than in the Indies. The Brazilians say, that this tree af them both food and shelter. Of the trunk and leaves their huts are built; of its fibrous roots kets are made, and cordage of the outward h its fruit supplies meat and drink; and an exce oil is obtained by skimming the juice which ma pressed from the pulp. The cocoa is in ge use in cookery among all ranks; and it forms o the chief articles of internal trade: elegant cup

s, and is the same as Sapan wood.

valuable for cabinet work; the tatajuba or fustic, yielding a yellow dye; the Brazilian myrtle, a beautiful shrub, distinguished by its shining silver bark; the sippipira, resembling the teak of India; the peroba, oraubu, and louro, resembling species of oak and larch; logwood; mahogany, and a variety of forest-trees, invaluable for the purposes of ship-building. The productions of the soil are cotton, sugar, tobacco, rice, coffee, maize, beans, cassava root,* bananas, wheat, mandioc, ipecacuanha, ginger, pepper, yams, oranges, figs, nitre, diamonds and other precious stones, gold, silver, and most of the metals.†

The woods of Brazil are full of rapacious animals, among which are the tiger-cat; the hyæna; the saretu, an animal about the size of a fox, but much more ferocious; the jaguar, the terror of the Brazilian peasantry; the sloth; and the porcupine. The farmers are much annoyed by ounces, which are exceedingly ravenous; they are of various colours, some

* Maize, beans, and cassava root, are the principal food of the inhabitants, and are therefore very generally cultivated. Sugar, previously to the discovery of the mines, formed the principal riches of the country. Rice forms the second object of trade in Maranham.

† There seems no reason to doubt that wine might be produced abundantly in Brazil. At Bahia, the most delicious grapes are said to have been reared in the gardens of individuals; but the want of industry has prevented their cultivation from becoming general. The Portuguese government, adhering to their illiberal system of monopoly, discouraged and even prohibited the cultivation of the vine, lest it should interfere with the commercial interests of the mother country; but Mr. Luccock states that, on the emigration of the court, the vine was introduced into Rio de Janeiro by the king,—with what success we are not informed. An experiment has also been made to cultivate the tea-plant, which has been supposed to be indigenous to Brazil. For further particulars respecting the productions of the country, the reader is referred to the description of the provinces.

ck, others brown red : [illegible] wild
gs. Wild hogs are [illegible]
d called the anta or [illegible]
s a hog, but is the [illegible]
gest of the quadru[illegible]
ds like a horse. [illegible]
d dives in an extra[illegible]
of remaining for a [illegible]
es and pools with [illegible]
hunters, its flesh [illegible]
s little from that of the [illegible]
ls are generally [illegible]
re introduced by the [illegible]
mmon, and vast [illegible]
ts of the country. [illegible]
southern regi[illegible]
s of birds, the [illegible]
red race, is [illegible]
s found here [illegible]
the most [illegible]
nidable reptiles are [illegible]
snake, the [illegible]
n venomous [illegible]
the marshy [illegible]
is the [illegible]
uals the [illegible]
e. One [illegible]
ne traveler[illegible]
ing bull.

No [illegible]
ery that [illegible] with
ound it. [illegible]
as from the [illegible]
de, either [illegible]
oil. [illegible]
t branch of [illegible]

POPULATION, &c.

The free population of Brazil consists of 1. E ropeans; 2. White persons born in Brazil, w claim to be distinguished as Brazilians; 3. Mul toes, that is, the mixed caste between whites a blacks; 4. Mamalucoes, the mixed caste betwe whites and Indians; 5. Indians in a domestica state, who are generally called Cabocloes; 6. I dians in a savage state, who are called Tapuy 7. free Negroes born in Brazil; 8. manumitted Af cans; 9. Mestizoes, the mixed caste between I dians and Negroes. The slave population con of Africans, creole negroes, mulattoes, and me zoes. In Brazil, unlike the Spanish and the E lish colonies, there is hardly any political divis of castes, and very few of those galling and d grading distinctions, which have been made by other nations in the management of their colonie This was not intended by the mother country, b has arisen from the circumstances connected wi the colonisation of this vast territory, which render intermarriage with the natives inevitable. It is true that, according to the old code, people of colour a not eligible to some of the chief offices of gover ment, nor can they become members of the prie hood; but, from the mildness of the laws, the mix castes have gained ground considerably, and the p

* This applies to the more northern provinces, to which M Koster, whom we follow, chiefly refers. The Tapuyas o Taperiyas were the most noted of the Brazilian tribes in th northern districts, and had extended themselves for a consid rable way along the coast. The Topinambas had their ch settlements in Bahia. The Molopagues and Motayes had e tablished themselves on the river Paraiba. The Botocudos or Aymores, were found in Minas Geraes and Porto Segur the Tamoyos, in Rio Janeiro; the Coroardoes, in Minas Ger es; the Guaycurues, in Matto Grosso; and the Puries, in E piritu Santo.

ons against them are evaded, or rather have
ne obsolete.* "Perhaps," remarks Mr Kos-
'the heroic conduct of Cameram and Hen-
Diaz, the Indian and negro chieftains, in the
is and most interesting contest between the
mbucans and the Dutch, and the honours
quently granted by the crown of Portugal to
of them, may have led to the exaltation of the
al character of the much injured varieties of
human species of which they are members."
iages between white men and women of co-
are by no means rare, and the circumstance is
ely observed upon, unless the woman is deci-
of dark colour, for even a considerable tinge
pass for white. What is remarkable, notwith-
ing the relationship of the mulattoes on one side
e black race, they consider themselves supe-
o the mamalucoes, taking pride in being wholly
nected with the Indians: even the mestizo
to pass for a mulatto. The mamalucoes, on
ther hand, whether from a consciousness of
of free birth on both sides, or from residing
ne most part in the interior, where government
re loose, appear to have more independence,
o pay less deference to a white, than the mu-
They are handsomer than the mulattoes, and
omen of this caste surpass in beauty all others
e country.

ne creole negroes form, in the northern pro-
, a numerous and distinct race; they have

A mulatto enters into holy orders," says Mr Koster,
appointed a magistrate, his papers stating him to be a
man, but his appearance plainly denoting the contrary.
versing on one occasion with a man of colour, who was
service, I asked him if a certain *capitam-mor* was not
tto? He answered, "He was, but is not now." I
him to explain, when he added, "Can a *capitam-mor*
ulatto?"

handsome persons, are brave and hardy, obed to the whites, and willing to please; but are e affronted, and the slightest allusion to their co enrages them to a high degree. They will s times reply: "A negro I am, but always uprig They have their exclusive regiments, as wel the mulattoes, of which every officer and so must be perfectly black. There are two of t regiments for the province of Pernambuco, di guished by the names of Old Henriques and Henriques, in honour of Henrique Diaz, the mous negro chieftain. Neither privates nor cers receive any pay: their neat soldier-like pearance indicates, therefore, a certain degre wealth among them. The uniform is white c turned up with scarlet. On gala days, the s rior black officers, in their white uniforms, their respects to the government exactly in same manner as officers of any other caste. groes are excluded, however, from the priestho and from the civil offices which the mulatto obtain through evasion of the law. They are disqualified for serving in any regiments except t own; but this regulation protects them from the secutions which the other castes suffer in recru seasons.†

* Mr Luccock states that, on the re-establishment of reli brotherhoods at Rio, subsequently to the emigration o court, "even negroes were allowed to put on the habit o order, to carry a silver wand, and to appear in procession princes and priests."

† The term *Senhor* or *Senhora*, is made use of to all persons, whites, mulattoes, and blacks; and in speaking freeman of whatever class or colour, the manner of addr the same.

The Africans who are imported from Angola, are b
tised in lots before they leave their own shores, a
on their arrival in Brazil, are taught the doctrine
the church. Those imported from other parts, ar
unbaptised, and must be first taught certain prayers,
the acquirement of which one year is allowed to the m
ter before he is obliged to present the slave at the pa
church. The law is not always strictly adhered t
to time, but it is seldom, if ever, evaded altogeth
The slaves have their religious brotherhoods as wel
the free persons. They have also a Christian godd
of their own in the person of Our Lady of the Ros
who sometimes condescends to be painted with a bl
face and hands. They are regularly married acco
ing to the forms of the Catholic church, the banns
ing published in the same manner as those of free
sons. If a slave marries a free woman, the chil
are free. The master's consent is required, but
Brazilians encourage marriages among their sla
"I have seen many happy couples," says Mr Kos
"as happy at least as slaves can be, with large fam
of children rising round them." Cases of cruelty
hardship are not unfrequent; but, on the whole,
slaves in Brazil are incomparably better circumstan
than those in the British islands. Regulations w
Protestant Englishmen have declared to be impract
ble, or ridiculed as absurd, have been adopted with
happiest moral results by the Brazilians, under
guidance of no better motives, perhaps, than relig
bigotry and superstition. "Still they are slav
says Mr Koster, "and in this word are included, g
misery, great degradation, great misfortune."
negroes whose condition is the hardest, are those
ployed in the mines, particularly the diamond m
It was enacted by one of the Portuguese mona
that, after remaining in bondage ten years, they sh
be entitled to their liberty; but, though this law rem
unrepealed, its execution is evaded.

he Indians will be more particularly noticed here-
. There remains to be mentioned another distinct
, the ciganoes,* the gipsies of Brazil, of whom Mr
ter gives the following account. "I frequently
d of these people, but never had an opportunity of
ng any of them. Parties of ciganoes were in the
t of appearing formerly once every year at the vil-
of Pasmado and other places in that part of the
ntry; but the late governor of the province was in-
al to them, and attempts having been made to ap-
end some of them, their visits were discontinued.
y are represented as being a people of a brownish
, with features which resemble those of white per-
s, and as being tall and handsome. They wander
n place to place in parties of men, women, and child-
, exchanging, buying, and selling horses and gold
silver trinkets. The women travel on horseback,
ng between the panniers of the loaded horses, and
young ones are placed within the panniers among
baggage. The men are excellent horsemen, and
ough the packhorses may be overburthened, these
wo will only accommodate matters by riding slow-
pon their own horses, and never think of dividing
loads more equally; but they preserve themselves
the animals upon which they ride, quite unencum-
d. They are said to be unmindful of all religious
rvances, and never to hear mass or confess their
. It is likewise said, that they never marry out of
r own nation." Future travellers in Brazil will do
to verify this information, and to ascertain how
he ciganoes are to be identified with the ubiquitous
to which they bear apparently so strong a resem-
ce.

* This word, *ciganos*, is without doubt derived from
ntianos: the word *gitanos* is also used as a name for these
e.

The costume of the Brazilians is, for the most
that of Portugal. The gorgeous magnificence in w
the wealthy indulge, is said to be accompanied w
total neglect of internal neatness and cleanliness. W
visiting, or on a holiday, they are fond of an exce
embroidery and spangles on their waistcoat, and
to their linen: shoe and knee buckles of solid
are common, and they are addicted to every speci
finery. At home, a gown or thin jacket is subs
ed. The usual dress of the ladies is a single
coat over a worked chemise: stockings are n
used. When attending mass, a deep black silk
tle, worn over the head, conceals the transparent
tume beneath. In some places, the European
is adopted by ladies of rank. Further details wil
cur in noticing the peculiar customs of the se
provinces.

PROVINCIAL DIVISIONS.

Geographers have widely differed in their acc
of the provincial divisions of Brazil; but, inclu
the recent accessions to the empire, there appear
no fewer than twenty-two distinct provinces. Th
beginning from the north, are as follows:

Maritime Provinces.

1. Guiana.
2. Para.
3. Maranham.
4. Seara.
5. Rio Grande, North.
6. Paraiba.
7. Pernambuco.*
8. Seregippe d'el Re
9. Bahia.†
10. Porto Seguro.
11. Espiritu Santo.
12. Rio de Janeiro.

* The old captaincy of Itamarica is included in thi
vince.

† This province includes the old captaincy of Dos Ilh

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

ceeding it take a survey of these several di-
e begin with that which contains the present
vernment.

PROVINCE OF RIO DE JANEIRO.

ovince of Rio de Janeiro, which derives its
m the magnificent bay of its capital, is
on the north by Espirito Santo, from which
ded by the river Carabouna; and by Minas
from which it is divided by the rivers Preto
iba, and, in part, by the Serra da Mantiqueira;
the west, it borders on St Paulo; and on the
the east it has the Atlantic Ocean. It in-
lf of the ancient captaincy of St Vincente,
with a portion of territory formerly belonging
u Santo. It is estimated to be sixty leagues
from east to west, near its northern extremity,
near its southern; and to have twenty-three
f medium width.
gan mountains (Serra dos Orgoas), so called

ing half of the old captaincy of St Vincente, and
Amaro. The remainder of St Vincente is compris-
rovince of Rio de Janeiro.
rising the greater part of the old and short-lived cap-
t Amaro.
borigines are said to have called the bay, on account
ow entrance, *Nelhero-hy*, or *Nithero-hy*; that is,
er. The bay is so concealed by mountains, that
on arriving in front of the inlet.

on account of the resemblance which the heads bear, in various parts, to the front of divide the province into two parts; northern *accina* (mountains above), and southern, or (sea-coast). These again are subdivided; into the districts of Paraiba Nova and Cant latter into Rio Janeiro, Ilha Grande, Cape Goytacazes. The greater part of the provin tainous. The only considerable river is th which proceeds from a small lake in the so of the Serra da Bocania, a continuation of dos Orgoas: it flows into the captaincy of and, after a long and winding course, re-ent vince in which it rose, and disembogues in part. The body of its waters is not pro however, to the length of its course.

Lakes, however, are numerous: the m able are, the Jacaré-pagua, and the Roderig tas. The *Augra dos Reys* (King's Bay) i scarcely less beautiful than that of Rio de Jan islands are scattered over it. The princip Ilha Grande (Great Isle), is about four and two in width, and has many good ha best of which has obtained the remarkable Seio de Habraham (Abraham's bosom). contains about three thousand inhabitants.

The province of Rio contains two cites towns; but, with the exception of the metro are all small and insignificant.

The city of St Sebastian, now univers Rio, the capital of the empire, is situated o ern shore of the great bay from which i name, and which extends from the city into the continent, about three times as far tance to the anchorage. It occupies the

* The Rio de Janeiro is not a river, but only the salt bay or gulf, which was mistaken by De *month of a river.*

art of a tongue of land of an irregularly quadrangu-
ar shape. The most easterly point is the *Punta do Calabouço:* the most northerly is the *Armazem do Sal,* opposite to which is the little *Ilha das Cobras.* The oldest and most important part of the city is built between these two points, along the shore, in the form of an oblong quadrangle, lying N.W. and S.E. The ground is, for the most part, level and low; but, at the northern end, are five hills, which come so near the sea as to leave room for only one street by the sea-side; while towards the south and south-east, the city is commanded by several promontories of the Corcovado. The more ancient part of the city is traversed by eight narrow, parallel streets, crossed by many others at right angles. The Campo de S. Anna, a large square to the west of the old city, separates it from the new town. The latter, which has risen for the most part since the royal emigration in 1808, is connected with the south-western quarter, or *bairro de Mato-porcos*, by the bridge of S. Diogo, thrown over a salt water inlet called *Saco d' Alferes;* and on the north-west, the extensive suburb of Cajumbi leads to the royal palace of S. Cristovão. Mato-porcos lies immediately under the lower eminences of the Corcovado. On its summit, the church of *Nossa Senhora da Gloria* forms a conspicuous object, commanding the southern part of the city. Further southward, detached rows of houses occupy the two semicircular bays of Catête and Bota Fogo, and single houses are scattered in the picturesque valleys which intersect the Corcovado: the most pleasant of these is the valley of Laranjeiras. The hills along the north-eastern bank are partly covered with large buildings. The ancient college of the Jesuits, the convent of the Benedictines, the episcopal palace, and the *Forte da Conceiçao*, have, from the sea, a grand appearance. The residence formerly occupied

by the viceroys, which, after the arrival of the co of Lisbon, was enlarged by the addition of the Ca melite convent, and fitted up for the royal famil stands in the plain. Altogether, the approach to R is represented by all travellers to be extremely pict resque.

The first land that is seen on approaching the co from Europe, is Cape Frio, distant between sixty a seventy miles from Rio. From this point to the ci a succession of interesting objects presents themselv among which is seen the lofty peak of the Corcova to which the people of Rio repair for the extens prospect it commands. The entrance of the bay protected chiefly by the fort of Santa Cruz, where vessels bring to, in order that the telegraph may a nounce to what country they belong. It is built the *Pico*, a steep point of granite rock on the e side, and opposite to it are the batteries of S. Jo and S. Theodosio: the strait formed by these t points, which is only 5000 feet wide, is also co manded by a fort on the low rocky island, *Ilha Lagem*, situated almost in the middle of the entran In the interior of the bay, the most important wo are the fort de Villegagnon (so named from t French adventurer), and that of Ilha das Cobr both on small islands not far from the city. On t latter island state criminals are confined. In the c itself, besides the *Forte da Conceiçao*, already m tioned, towards the north-west part of it, there the batteries of *Monte* on the south-east; and the let of Bota Fogo is covered by the lines of *Pra vermelha*. The harbour is one of the most capacio commodious, and beautiful in the world. The imm diate back-ground of the city is formed by beaut green hills, covered with woods, and interspersed w villas and convents; while the foreground is enliver by the vessels of all nations. The bay contains ne ly a hundred islands. From either shore rise lo

d well-clad mountains, terminating, in some places, l abrupt precipices of the wildest and most romantic ms. At their base, white cottages and houses are attered amid patches of cultivation, and narrow val- s of orange-trees wind among the mountains. very little eminence has its church or its fort; and umerable boats flitting about the bay, and mingling h the shipping, add animation and interest to the ne. The air is soft, the sky generally cloudless, d every breeze bears over the calm waters the fra- nce of the orange and the lemon. Such is the wing language in which modern travellers describe e first appearance of the Brazilian capital.

"If any person," says Dr Von Spix, who visited o in 1817,* "considering that this is a new conti- nt, discovered only three centuries ago, should cy that nature must be here still entirely rude, ghty, and unconquered, he would believe, at least e in the capital, that he was in some other part of globe: so much has the influence of the civiliza- n of ancient and enlightened Europe effaced the aracter of an American wilderness in this point of colony. The language, manners, architecture, l the influx of the productions of all parts of the be, give a European exterior to Rio de Janeiro. t the traveller is soon reminded that he is in a ange quarter of the world, by the varied crowd of groes and mulattoes who every where meet him, soon as he sets his foot on shore. To us, this ht was less agreeable than it was striking. The graded, brutish nature of these half-naked unfortu- e men, offends the feelings of the European who

* Travels in Brazil, in the years 1817—1820, undertaken by mand of H. M. the King of Bavaria. By Dr J. B. Von t and Dr C. V. P. Von Martius. 2 vols. 8vo. London. 4.

has but just quitted the seat of polite manners and agreeable forms."

Far more has been done for this beautiful portion of the new world by nature, than by man. The style of architecture in Rio is, in general, mean, resembling that of the old part of Lisbon; and though this town has always ranked as the most important in Brazil, or as second only to Bahia at the time that the latter was the seat of government, yet, it is only since the emigration of the court, that it has assumed the character of a European city. Some idea of what Rio *was*, may be gathered from the improvements which are mentioned by Mr Luccock as having taking place, at the period of his second visit to the capital in 1813, in the course of the preceding five years. The city had been greatly enlarged; the old streets greatly improved in cleanliness, and the houses in neatness; the roads cleared and widened, and villas and gardens had begun to adorn the vicinity. "An increase of domestic comfort," he adds, "had arisen from the establishment of a market for cattle without the city, and of several markets for vegetables and fruits within it; from a more abundant and regular supply of fish, and the more free use of mutton; from greater care with respect to the quality of meat, and the cleanliness of the places where it was slaughtered and exposed to sale. Craftsmen of different descriptions had made their appearance among them, so many smiths, that *it was no longer difficult to get a horse shod.* Mills for grinding corn had been much improved, and bread was come more into use. Charcoal was manufactured, and, for cooking, introduced into the houses. Nuisances were more readily removed, and even scavengers were now and then seen in the streets." *

* Notes on Rio de Janeiro, &c., by John Luccock, 4to London, 1820, p. 254. The following amusing account is given of the state of the arts in Rio only so far back as 1808

g the nuisances which had been removed, gloomy projections from the upper windows,

e arts were practised in the most formal and tedious ry workman deemed himself initiated into some hich none but his own fraternity could comprehend. have expressed astonishment when they have seen man take up a saw, and use it with no less dexteri- ith greater speed, than themselves. There was as ity in rivalling the skill of many workmen, as their

So ignorant and stupid were they, that it was ne- cessary to form them a rough model of the article y were required to make, and to go from shop to e one could be found willing to undertake it. I been told, that what I wanted could not be execut- an ingenuity, although it was, perhaps, one of the non instruments in domestic use. To this, white were mechanics, added another folly; every one of ht himself too much a gentleman to work in public, ie would be degraded if seen carrying the smallest en the implements of his calling, along the streets. ride and formal self-importance which pervaded all razilian society, were, in this class of men, singu- l and ridiculous.

tance or two will best illustrate this trait of charac- is necessary to open a lock, of which I had lost the the skill requisite to pick it was so rare, that the l waiter of the hotel where I then lodged, were plexed with my inquiries, at what place it was to

At length they advised me to apply to an English who had been settled in Rio about two years, and several men, one of whom he requested to go with ien masters did not venture to command; —assuring man would execute what I wanted. He detained time, but, to compensate for the delay, made his at last in full dress, with a cocked hat, shoe and es, and other corresponding paraphernalia. At the house he still loitered, wishing to hire some black y his hammer, chisel, and another small instrument. that they were light, and proposed to carry a part ole of them myself; but this would have been as ictical solecism as using his own hands. The gen- ited patiently, until a negro appeared; then made

called *jealousies*, which have given way, by th command, for open balconies. These jealousi raised on platforms of stone two and a half fee and extended to the top of the window. The formed of lattice-work of a fanciful pattern, into pannels or compartments, some of which v ted up with hinges at the top, so as to form a sort which, when opened a little way, allowed per the balcony to look down into the street witho seen themselves. They gave to the fronts houses a dull, heavy, and suspicious appe The ostensible motive for their removal was prove the appearance of the city: the real cau said to be an apprehension that, sooner or late jealousies might become ambuscades for as who, unseen and unsuspected might thence di the fatal bullet.

his bargain, and proceeded in due state, followed by porary servant. The task was soon finished, by brea lock, instead of picking it; when the man of im making a profound bow, stalked off with his followe

"Another anecdote of a similar spirit appears am notes. I give it here, though its hero did not belong to the class of mechanics. I was on the eve of leav and waiting with great anxiety for the packet, being c that it must bring me information of the most interest When it arrived, I waited upon the superintendant of office, and requested that the expected letter might be ed to me; but the bag had not yet got thither, and ap have met with some unnecessary detention. I thereu ed away to the British consul's office, and there lear it had been sent from thence a considerable time Going down the stairs, I observed the Portuguese serva ing at the door, with a small parcel in his hand, of inquired whether that was the mail from England, h that it was, and that he had been long waiting to hi one to carry it after him to the post-office, which w two hundred yards distant. I was in no humour at t to bear with such pompous folly, and after uttering se ty abuse, which had been better spared, snatched th from his hand, and carried it off at a pace seldom with

gold and silver smiths and jewellers, who other tradesmen, live together in one stre calls to mind the magnificent *Ruas de Our Prata* of Lisbon. The workmanship of thes is, indeed, inferior to the European, but is i tute of taste and solidity. Many trades, v very necessary in Europe, are at present a perfluous in the interior of this country, on a the circumscribed wants of the inhabitants. capital, however, and the other towns on t joiners, white-smiths, and other artisans are n but tanners, soap-boilers, and workers in scarce. There is a great demand for mecl build sugar and other mills, to construct mac working the gold mines, &c.; and very hi are given them. Hitherto, no glass, china, hat manufacturers have been established in th and the erection of them would hardly be ad a country which can obtain the productions of I industry on such low terms in exchange for duce of its rich soil."*

To pursue the description of the capital: th which are straight and narrow, are paved with and are now provided with a raised pavemer foot-passengers;† but they are very sparingly and hardly more than a few hours in the nigh lamps placed before the images of the Virgi houses, which are generally of two stories, and narrow in proportion to their depth, are most part, built of blocks of granite: the upp however, is often of wood. The threshold posts, lintels, and window-frames are of massy or felt-spar, brought from Bahia in a state r

* Von Spix's Travels, vol. i. p. 198.

† This improvement, mentioned by Von Spix, a have been introduced since Mr Luccock visited Rio.

dilection of the great or the wealthy. The orc is at the east end, and is awkwardly crowded tc the ceiling. Around are traces of considerable ations, much overgrown with brushwood." N the churches have either any fine paintings or of sculpture, but only rich guilding. The re establishments comprise three monasteries, Be tine, Franciscan, and Carmelite ; a Franciscan nery ; a nunnery of Theresans ; an *hospice* almoners of the Holy Land ; a *misericordia*, v hospital ; a foundling hospital, founded in (which, within sixty years from that period, re nearly 5000 infants ;) and a *recolhimento* for orphans, born in wedlock and of white parents, they remain till they are portioned off in ma from the funds of this munificent institution ; to with some smaller monastic and charitable instit

The royal palace skirts the beach, and is s great advantage from the principal landing- which is within sixty yards of the doors. It is ill-constructed, and inconvenient. The palace bishop, which stands on a high hill north of th is superior to that of the royal family. The cu house is a miserable building. The inns are ab ably bad. The new mint, the naval and the m arsenals, are called magnificent buildings, bu present a very poor appearance to the eyes of ropean.

Though, in proportion to the size and the wa the city, Rio has but a scanty supply of water, are several public fountains, and new ones ar tinually being erected. The aqueduct by which fountains are supplied, is a noble work, and is de ed by Dr Von Spix as the finest piece of archit of which the city can at present boast. It was pleted in the year 1740, and is an imitation one at Lisbon, erected by John V. " It cons Mr Luccock says, " of two walls, about six feet

l over, with sufficient space for workmen to en-
occasionally, and pass through its whole length.
itable intervals there are openings for the ad-
n of light and air. Within is laid the canal,
eighteen inches wide, twenty-four deep, and
miles long. It commences at the bottom of the
onical peak of the Corcovado, where the waters
g from that mountain, are collected into a cov-
eservoir, and thence conveyed into the canal.
course from the summit is through deep and
woods, and the canal is defended from the sun-
; and thus, until they reach the city, little of
reshness is lost." Many persons earn their sub-
ce by carrying the water to those who live at a
ce from the fountains; but, says Dr Von Spix,
distribution of it by uncleanly negroes, who offer
sale in open vessels or in skins, which are often
ed for hours together to the heat of the sun, re-
to be altered by the Board of Health: indeed,
overnment would do great service to the inhabit-
y causing the water to be conveyed into many
e houses." The largest of the public fountains
he square fronting the palace, and close to the
ur: this supplies the ships, and is constantly sur-
ed by crowds of sailors of all nations.* It was
temptation to lead a new aqueduct to the south-
of the city.
e education of youth is provided for by many li-
d academies; but persons of fortune have their
en prepared by private tutors for the university
imbra; which, from the scarcity of good teach-
very expensive. In the *Seminario de S. Joa-*
the elements of Latin and church singing are

aptain Cook expressed doubts of the goodness of this
for long voyages; but Dr Von Spix states, that the expe-
has been made of taking it to India, and bringing it back,
has been found to be uncorrupted by the voyage.

taught. But the best academy is stated (by Dr Spix) to be the Lyceum, or *Seminario de S. J* where, besides Greek, Latin, French, and Engl rhetoric, geography, and mathematics,—philosoph taught, and divinity. Most of the teachers are ec siastics, who have now, however, much less influe on the education of the people than formerly. A useful establishment, of later standing, is the sc of surgery (*Aula de Cirurgia*). The course of st in this institution is as follows: first year, anato chemistry, and pharmacy; second year, the sa with the addition of physiology; third year, pathol and therapeutics; fourth year, surgery and midwif and in the fifth year, the students attend the neighb ing military hospital. The professors are practi physicians in the city. Natural history, inclu botany, is also taught the pupils by a learned Can lite: rom Pernambuco, Fra Leandro do Sacramer There is a mineralogical cabinet, and "a most in nificant beginning of a zoological cabinet, consis of a few stuffed birds and some cases of butterfli The military academy (*Academia Militar Re* founded in 1810, though provided with good mast and especially favoured by the king, has hardly scholars; but in the newly established *Aula do C mercio*, the lectures on commerce, as well as those chemistry, are numerously attended. There is a l anical garden in the vicinity of Rio, which will be ticed hereafter.

"Immediately after the arrival of the king," Von Spix states, "it was intended to give a univer to the new monarchy. It was, however, yet unde ed, whether the seat of it should be at Rio de Jane or at S. Paulo, which is situated in a more tempe climate. Mr J. Garcia Stockler, son of a Ger consul of the Hanse Towns at Lisbon, a man of c siderable literary acquirements, and a worthy mem of the Lisbon academy, proposed a plan, concei

y in a spirit of the German high schools, which, ed, was much approved by the ministry, but met so much opposition from those who wished Brazil ntinue dependent on Portugal as a colony, that vhole plan was given up." The Brazilians who to give their sons a university education, have no native, therefore, but to send them across the seas oimbra. This might once have been attended advantage, as affording the young students an rtunity of becoming acquainted with the great in- ions of Europe; but now, the necessity of es- shing a university in Brazil, without which it : still be considered as half a colony, is becom- every day more urgent. Of course, the pro- rs must, in the first instance, be furnished by ope. Dr Von Spix thinks, that nothing but such stitution can rouse the slumbering energies of the try.

itherto the government, in their enlightened so- de to promote education, and to encourage the nising arts in Rio, have been much in advance ie general intellectual condition of the popula-

Another new institution, the Academy of , owes its foundation chiefly to the late minis- Araujo, Conde da Barca, who received almost whole of his education in foreign countries. hile Europe saw, in the foundation of such an ution, an apparently irrefragible proof of the l progress of the new state, it is evident," re- s Dr Von Spix, "upon closer examination, it is at present by no means adapted to the s of the people, and therefore cannot yet exert extensive influence. Several French artists, his- l and landscape painters, sculptors, engravers, architects, and at their head Lebreton, formerly tary to the Academy of Arts at Paris," (who, ver, died at his country-house, near Rio, soon

after the arrival of Dr Von Spix,) "were inv
from France, in order, by their instructions
works, to awaken and to animate the disposition
the Brazilians for the arts, upon which Araujo
confidently calculated. But it could not fail to
come evident, that the fine arts cannot take ro
here, till the mechanical arts, which satisfy the
wants, have prepared a way for their reception;
that it is not till commerce, the activity of which
directed to external objects, is finally establish
that endeavours after the enjoyments and refi
ments of the arts can arise in a nation. The
is scarcely any taste here for painting or sculptu
and hence we see even in the churches, instead
real works of art, only ornaments overloaded wi
gold."

Music, however, is cultivated in Rio with con
erable enthusiasm and success. "The Brazilian,
says this traveller, "like the Portuguese, has a re
fined ear for agreeable modulation." The guit
here, as in the south of Europe, is the favourit
instrument, and the national songs which are sun
with this simple accompaniment, are partly of Po
tuguese origin, partly native productions. The em
peror has a private band of vocal and instrumen
tal performers, composed of native mulattoes an
negroes, which Dr Von Spix pronounces highl
creditable to the musical talent of the Brazilian
Don Pedro is in the habit of occasionally leadi
this band himself. "Hadyn's favourite pupil," th
Chevalier Neukomm, was, in 1817, composer to th
royal chapel; but the musical knowledge of the i
habitants was not yet ripe for his masses, which a
in the style of the most celebrated German comp
sers. "At present, the first thing required of a ma
is, that it shall proceed in cheerful melodies, and th
a long and pompous *gloria* shall be succeeded by
short *credo*."

unfortunate circumstance, as regards both
ry character and the moral taste of the
, that, in Rio at least, so decided a pre-
s shewn by the higher classes for the
nguage and French literature. "Besides
ations of the day, with which the French
des Modes supply Brazil, the works of
and Rousseau are read with so much
at several patriotic writers have found rea-
claim against the Gallomania. "This cir-
," adds Dr Von Spix, "is the more re-
because political and mercantile interests
Portuguese with the English, and we might
naturally expect a greater inclination to
ure of England." But the difference of
and the prejudice against heretical litera-
probably, the reason that English writers
preferred, and that even translations from
ish into the Portuguese, are not by any
numerous as those from the French. All
nce of the ecclesiastics would be in fa-
rance, rather than of England. The gene-
edge of French has not, however, banish-
other tongue in the higher classes. With
tion of the court, and those immediately
to it, the French and English languages
n only by the men, and are therefore sel-
in company. In 1817, there were only
erent booksellers' shops at Rio, and only
papers were published in the whole king-
Gazeta of Rio, and at Bahia, the *Idade
do Brazil*. Even these were not then
general interest. On the other hand, the
ewspapers were circulated by the Portu-
migrants, and the London journals by the
Since the declaration of the Brazilian in-
ce, the number of journals has, however,
creased.

AMUSEMENTS

The amusements of the inhabitants of the m polis are very limited. The theatre, which gene holds the highest rank among places of an ment, is thus described by Mr Luccock. " situated close to the palace, and is a poor, s dark house. Its form on the inside is an ova one end of which is the stage, and at the othe royal box, which occupies the whole northern sid the building. Other boxes, cut off from all c munication with the air, and hot almost beyond durance, extend round the sides of the house, have an open clumsy railing in front, most ga painted. The pit is divided into two parts: tha fore the royal box has forms, with a rail, ag which the shoulders may be leaned; the divi behind this, and beneath the seat of royalty separated by a barrier, and the part of the s ence stationed there must stand and listen. house is lighted from tin sconces, fixed to the lars which support the boxes, and a chandelie wood with tin branches. With this elegant fi ture, the scenery and other decorations thorou correspond. Sentinels with fixed bayonets are pl in every part of the house, and in all the ave leading to it."*

" One of the last scenes," adds Mr Luc " which I witnessed during my first stay at Rio 1808), was the catastrophe of a tragedy. The roine, dressed in white muslin, was supposed t put to death while the curtain was down, by se ing her head from the body. Here, I think, w

* Rio is described by this traveller as properly a gar town, being divided into military districts, and soldiers on were always walking about the streets, some in regime and others without them, acting in the civil, as well a military department.

ieen an end of her part, on any other than
:ilian stage; but, after a little time, the cur-
:as drawn up again, for no other purpose
ɔ shew the audience the headless body of
ly, seated upright in an arm-chair, with the
ɔubbling from her neck, and flowing down her
t."

Graham, who visited Rio in 1821, was pre-
: the performance of an after-piece, which was
omewhat less barbarous taste. It was called
Discovery of Brazil." Cabral and his offi-
ere represented as just landed: they had dis-
d the natives of the country; and, accord-
the custom of the Portuguese discoverers,
ad set up their white flag with the red holy
upon it, whence they had first named the
At the foot of this emblem, they kneeled in
), and endeavoured to induce the Brazilians
them in their sacred rites. These, on their
ried to persuade Cabral to reverence the
ly bodies, and dissention seemed about to
the union of the new friends, when, by a
enough machine, a little genius came down
bove, and leaping from its car, displayed the
nperial standard, inscribed *Independencia o*
This was totally unexpected in the house,
for an instant seemed electrified into silence;
n commenced a loud clapping of hands, which
ed for some time!

-baiting, the grand national pastime of the
·ds and Portuguese, appears happily not to
h in vogue in Rio. There is a building erect-
the purpose, but it is little used. The reason
d is, that the Brazilian bull does not possess
of the Portuguese. Not long ago, the in-
ts of Rio were astonished and delighted with
ore innocent and not less rational exhibition,—

some feats of horsemanship and tight-rope danc an English performer.

A Roman Catholic country, however, cann to present other public diversions in the shape ligious festivals, processions, and spectacles. royal emigration was followed by a prodigious val and multiplication of ceremonies and perfo ces of this description, "in which," says Mr cock, "a mixture of religion and pleasure place, not unlike our village wakes at their periods." Dr Von Spix was present at a val celebrated by the negroes in honour of patroness, *Nossa Senhora do Rosario*. "A on a slip of land running into the Bay, not fa the royal country-seat of S. Cristovâo, was towards the evening with a countless multitu brown and black people; and the band of m from S. Cristovâo, struck up a lively and merry strain, which was succeeded by a ver thetic sermon. Sky-rockets, crackers, serpent the like,* were let off in front of the church near the calm surface of the sea, to add to the dour of the solemnity."

Near the sea is the public promenade, a garden surrounded with walls, and protected a the sea by a perpendicular quay of hewn stone shady avenues of mango, jaca (the East-India fruit tree), yto, and rose apple-tree, between are planted the beautiful bushes of the *poin* are described by Dr Von Spix as very invit the evening, when the heat is allayed by th

* Fire-works form an important part of the religiou vals of the Brazilians; and the crackling of rockets heard almost daily, from an early hour in the mornin mingling with the frequent salutes from the guns of t and those of vessels arriving from all quarters, the vari sonant sounds of traffic, and the "busy hum" of me climes and languages.

* In the vicinity of this promenade, the pro-
arkets afford an interesting sight to the newly-
European, whose attention will be attracted
screams of the parrots exposed for sale, the
other animals peculiar to the country, and
of the gayest plumage from various parts of
ld.

COSTUME, &c.

ie costume, habits, and manners of the inhabi-
most minute account has been furnished by
ccock, which we give in his own words. It
ble that some changes may have taken place,
equence of the extraordiuary stimulus given to
ind of improvement by recent political events;
rms, no doubt, a correct representation of the
society in Rio, previously to its separation
mother country.

their dress and appearance," says this intelli-
aveller, "we strangers were more competent
than of their minds. The former is of the
sort. Among their familiar friends they are
th a shift only, bound about the waist with the
of a petticoat, and the bosom of it often fall-
from one shoulder. They wear no stockings,
lom either slippers, or the wooden clogs, with
apper leathers, called *tamancas*. Their hair
and too commonly uncombed, bound with a
close behind the head, the ends turned up to
wn, and there twisted about a sort of bodkin.
nes a wreathe of artificial flowers is added,
isly made by themselves of silk, beads, colour-

botanical names of these productions, as given
x, are, *Mangifera Indica*, *Artocarpus*
uarea trichilioides, *Eugenia Jambos*,
cherrima.

ing
ure not
ie morning
a number of

ed papers, tinsel, and the wings of some of the liant insects of the country; these are arrange worn with taste. Their manners are a contr every thing graceful,—coarse, boisterous, and they talk fluently, but commonly in loud and tones; their general air is sly and coquettish they have no idea that their carriage can possib cite disgust, or even that they can fail to be obj admiration: they have few opportunities of conv with the other sex, and what good fortune offers use with eagerness.

"Such manners may be attractive to their co men, but their influence can extend no further. ornaments of these females have a pleasing and set off the charms of a face, the features of are round and regular, of a black, lively, inqu eye, a smooth and open forehead, a mouth expr of simplicity and good temper, furnished with a and even set of teeth; united with a mode handsome figure, a sprightly, laughing air, and meanour gay, frank, and unsuspicious. Such common appearance of a young lady about th or fourteen years of age; a period when she u takes upon her the cares of a household, or r notwithstanding obvious disqualifications, assum character of a matron. Indeed, at eighteen, Brazilian woman, nature has attained to full mat a few years later, she becomes corpulent, and unwieldy, acquires a great stoop in her shoulder walks with an awkward, waddling gait; she beg decay, loses the good humour of her counter and assumes, in its place, a contracted and sc brow: the eye and mouth both indicate that they been accustomed to express the violent and vin

ssions, the cheeks are deprived of their plun
and thos our, and at twenty-five, or thirty at mos
sonant sou perfectly wrinkled old woman.
climes and la corpulence appeared to me to arise

: secluded and indolent habits. They were sel-
seen out of doors, except when going to mass,
arly as four o'clock in the morning, on *dias santos*,
lays of sacred obligation; and even then, the
le form and face were so wrapped up in mantles,
nclosed within the curtains of a *cadeira*, as to
lude the enjoyment of fresh air, and to conceal
y feature, except perhaps a wickedly talkative

These cadeiras answer, less commodiously, the
e purpose as do the palanquins of the East.
y consist of an arm-chair with a high back, to
h is attached a long foot-board, and a canopy.
nd the latter are suspended curtains of blue
, edged with some gaudy colour, and kept closed,
he machine passes along the streets, in order to
eal the haughty, or the constrained donna from
ic view. The whole is attached to a long pole,
ing over the lady's head, and is suspended be-
n two black men, who support it on their shoul-
. Such were the only carriages used formerly in
by people of fashion; and like the modern chaise,
which they have lately given place, they were
etimes very splendid, being decorated in such a
ner as might best display the taste, the wealth,
the rank of the owner. On the foot-board,
h is large enough for the purpose, is often seated
ttle *senhora*, forming the same idle habits as her
her has done, and laying a foundation for future
ieldiness of a similar kind.

The exercise which these ladies take, is almost
lly confined to the house. Little exertion is ne-
ary, and that little is opposed by inclination: they
surrounded by slaves, and it is their privilege to
aited upon. I have seen this carried to an ex-
which would be ridiculous, were it not something
e; and am sorry to add, that such sights are not
ual. A lady was seated on a mat, (one morning
n I called upon her,) surrounded by a number of

slaves, with needle-work in their hands; a drink vessel full of water, being placed so as that she c conveniently reach it. She interrupted the conv tion by suddenly calling aloud for another slav come from a different part of the house. When negress entered the room, the lady said to her, ' me that drinking-vessel.' She did so; her mis drank, and returned it; the slave replaced it i former situation, and retired without seeming to that the command was an extraordinary one, or she had performed aught which she had not dc thousand times before. Ah ! ladies, thought I, wonder that you become corpulent, and ruin constitution : these are the natural effects of ins

" Other causes of the change which has been iced, might be found, I have often thought, in an stinate adherence to unsuitable customs. The sh and furrowed appearance of the brow seems to r arise, in a great measure, from following Euro fashions under the burning sun of the torrid z ' where the full tide of day is poured.' Even white and genteel families of Brazil wear no cov on the head, no shade for the eye ; hence, the and pupil contract themselves as much as possibl shield the tender organ from the superabundan light. The walls of the houses too, both within without, are universally whitened, heightening, b flection, the midday glare, and sometimes prodi an almost intolerable uneasiness in the eyes of pe possessed of the strongest sight. Is it wonderfu the forehead and eyes of delicate females should dually assume an habitual contraction, which clouds many a fair face with appearances that s times misrepresent the real turn of the mind ? mature age is owing partly to climate, partly to a stitution enfeebled and ruined by inactivity ; m all, to the unnatural and shamefully early age at v females are allowed to marry. Their early goo

mour, or the show of it, soon wears away ; they often become the very reverse of what they were, and exhibit the alteration too plainly. This change may be attributed principally to the childish ceremony, and more foolish flattery, with which every woman is treated, who ranks above the condition of a slave. They seem to be regarded by the men as dolls, or as spoiled children, whose whims must be gratified and even anticipated ; and she who has the greatest number, obtains the most attention. The generality of ladies treated in this way, become, almost of course, fretful and peevish, and pour their spleen upon their slaves ; and when these resist or neglect the orders given them, endeavour to subdue them, by a noisy and boisterous behaviour, not always free from malignity, and by castigation, not the less severe for coming from a lady's hand. Here is exercise, and perhaps the most efficacious that they ever take, quickening the circulation, giving some tone to the muscles, and discharging peccant humours, but at the same time, destroying the temper, implanting in the heart the principles of a vixen, and stamping on the countenance the plain indications of what passes within.*

" When a gentleman calls upon another, if he be not intimate at the house, he goes thither in full dress, with a cocked hat, with buckles in his shoes and at the knees, and with a sword or dirk by his side. Having reached the bottom of the stairs, he claps his hands as

* " I have seen," says a recent French traveller, " yes, I have myself seen, two young ladies (of Rio) whose countenances wore the expression of mildness and benevolence, endeavour by way of pastime, to cut, at a certain distance, with a whip, the face of a negro whom they had ordered not to stir from the spot. This exercise seemed to amuse them. I would mention their names, if their father, who came in after the first essay, had not severely reprimanded them for their cruelty."— *Arago's Narrative of a voyage round the World.* 4to. 1823.

a signal to attract attention, and utters a sort of sibila sound between his teeth and the end of his tongue, t though he pronounced the syllables *chee eu*. The se vant who attends the call, roughly inquires in a nas tone, Who is it ? and being told, retires to inform t master of the house, what are the wishes of the visit If he be a friend, or one so well known as to be r ceived without ceremony, the master quickly comes him, and ushers him into the *sala*, making loud prot tations of the pleasure given him by the visit, mixi his complimentary speeches with a great number bows. Before business is entered upon, if that be t object, repeated apologies are offered for the free mo in which the visitor is received. And, indeed, th is often no little occasion for such apologies ; for t gentleman very generally makes his appearance w a beard of many days' growth, with his black hair the roughest state, though besmeared with grease, a with no clothing over his cotton shirt. This garm is, indeed, well made, and ornamented with need work, especially about the bosom. But then it commonly worn in the house so as to expose the bre and the sleeves are tucked up to the elbows. Or if, chance, it be secured at the neck and wrists by its gl ular gold buttons, the flaps appear on the outside, hang half way down the sides, over a waistband which cures round the loins a short pair of trowsers ; wh the legs are quite bare, and the feet covered with *mancas*. All this is not very delicate, more especi as the skins of the Brazilians abound with hair, and much sunburnt about the breast and legs.

" Should the call be a ceremonious one, a serv is sent to conduct the visitor to the *sala*, from wh as he enters, he often sees the persons who were the room, escaping at the other door. Here he w alone, it may be half an hour, when the gentlen appears in a sort of half-dress. They both bow p foundly at a distance: after a sufficiency of skill in t

has been displayed, and thus time gained to
in each other's rank and pretensions, they ap-
if unequal, with corresponding dignity and
—if supposed to be nearly equals, with famil-
The business is then entered upon, and des-
l at once. These bows between strangers, and
w approach, I almost like, as they give men
pportunity to measure and appreciate one an-
and prevent a thousand awkward blunders and
awkward apologies. With my countrymen in
, I participate in an abhorrence of the Brazil-
race."*

diculous custom prevails (or did prevail) in
obliging all persons to dismount from a car-
r horse, when any of the royal family are
along the streets. On such occasions, an
linary and whimsical bustle takes place the
: the approach is heralded by the cadets
nts somewhat superior to a common soldier):
are flying for fear of being ridden over;
are drawing up their carriages or mules into
r; and he is lucky who escapes unhurt: all
headed. Such a ceremony could not but be
pugnant to the feelings of Englishmen, Ame-
and other foreigners; but they have gene-
mplied with it. But a few years since, dur-
residence of the court of Lisbon at Rio,
en of Portugal, who had the character of
xtremely particular and peremptory on this
as taking her usual ride to a small cottage
den at the bottom of the Orange Valley,
e met Lord Strangford, who refused to com-
the accustomed ceremony. The cadets
insulted his lordship, by using their swords
elling him to dismount. The only redress
is lordship obtained, was the imprisonment

s on Rio Janeiro, &c. pp. 111—121.

of the guards for a short time. Some ti
Mr Sumpter, then the American ministe
court, met the queen in the same neighl
The guard rode up to him, saying, "
Senr." He replied, that he was the
minister, and that he would not dismount;
they did not hesitate to compel him. Mr
then said that he would not require any
tion for this gross insult, but that he sh
vide himself with holsters and pistols, a
shoot the first person who offered him
insult. Very shortly afterwards, he met th
guard again, who rode up to him, making
peremptory demand as before. In answer
he frankly told them, that the first man wl
him any violence, he would shoot dead
spot. This resolute conduct induced the
tire. Upon this, the queen ordered then
ceed a second time to dismount Mr Sum
they were intimidated by his continued
It is generally believed that her majest
incensed at this spirited conduct, requeste
nister of state to issue an order for Mr
imprisonment in the *Ilha das Cobras*.
nister, however, prevailed upon her majes
the result of a despatch to the king upon
ject, who was then fifty miles off, at St Cr
consequence was, that orders were immec
sued, that no foreigner should be compelle
more courtesy than his own sovereign
quire from him. Since that time, however,
lish merchant, who was driving his lady in
was beat by the queen's guards till his arr
quite black, and his life endangered, not
ing he had stopped his horse, stood
chaise, and took off his hat. In the montl
1819, Commodore Bowles was taking a
the Orange Valley, when the queen's c

off his horse with their swords. The cadets sent on board the Creole to apologise for their uct, and the commodore advised them in fu- to draw their swords only against an enemy. the king, who did not require this ridiculous inconvenient homage, the English generally desirous of shewing their respect by dismount-

he indolence with which all classes of the in- tants of Rio are reproached, is, undoubtedly, e ascribed in some measure to the relaxing cli- . The merchants, Mr Luccock says, seldom loy themselves for more than three hours in the . The shopkeepers are equally idle. All shop- s are closed, or nearly so, at noon. A cloth hen spread on the counter, in the close, damp n which serves as shop, parlour, and bed-room, ot "kitchen and all;" and the only regular meal he day is then hastily taken. The middle classes he citizens of Rio, who have not entirely adopted manners of Portugal, take a small proportion nimal food, contenting themselves with the ad- ble fruits, and the cheese imported from Minas aes, which, with banians, is met with on every . The Brazilian eats even wheaten bread but ingly, preferring to it his *farinha*. He eats moderately of his few dishes, drinks chiefly r, and takes every thing with the greatest re- rity. In the evening, he very prudently takes cely any thing; at the most, a cup of tea, or of e; and he avoids, especially at night, eating cool s. "Only such a regimen," says Dr Von Spix, d conforming to the nature of the climate, pre- es him from many diseases to which the stran- exposes himself through inattention or igno- e." Fish is not so much eaten here as on

the northern coasts. Mandioc and maize flour, a black beans, boiled with bacon and salt beef d in the sun, are the chief articles of diet among t lower classes.

Rio Janeiro has the reputation of being one the most unhealthy cities of Brazil—Dr Von S and Mr Luccock think, without reason. The c mate is hot and moist: high and thickly-wood mountains, the narrow entrance of the bay, a the numerous islands, impede the free passage the wind; but there are none of those very r changes of temperature which are so particularly jurious to the health. Moist, cold winds, prod ing slight rheumatism and catarrh, are, howeve not uncommon. The diseases most frequent a chronical diarrhœas, dropsy, intermitting fevers, s philis, and hydrocele; but the last of these only considered by Dr Von Spix as endemic, and chiefly attacks the newly arrived Europeans a North Americans. The Brazilian doctors attribu it chiefly to the water, but, this author thinks, err neously. Though Rio has no endemic intermitte fever, diseases readily assume this character, a fever soon follows on the slightest disorder. Amo the causes which have been thought to render Ri unhealthy, are, its low situation, which is scarcel above the level of the sea, and the filthiness of streets,* while the waters that descend from t mountains behind it, encompass it with stagn marshes. The marshy flats on the sea-side diffus during the time of the ebb,† an intolerable stench

* The cleaning of the streets is at present confided to t carrion vultures, who are protected on that account.

† "The internal basin of the bay has its tides, as well a the ocean. At new and full moon, high water, which rise fourteen or fifteen feet, sets in at thirty minutes past four. The ebb sometimes continues a whole day without intermission, at which time the current is the strongest on the west

[illegible], fortunately for the inhabitants, they do not remain uncovered by the water long enough to produce endemic fevers by their putrid exhalations. The mode of interment is another evil. The people have a superstitious dislike to burying their dead under the canopy of heaven, and therefore crowd their corpses into the churches, the atmosphere of which becomes by this means contaminated. Slavery, also, brings with it here its train of physical as well as moral evils: the slaves, who are commonly landed from Africa in a sickly state, frequently spread disease. The prisons, too, are in a loathsome and disgraceful condition. Much remains to be done for the improvement of Rio in these respects, by the future efforts of the government. The stranger should be advised neither to expose himself to the fatal effects of the sun's rays, by walking in the open air during the hottest parts of the day, when all the streets are deserted, nor to the dangerous consequences of taking cold in the first night-dews, when, after sunset, the atmosphere is suddenly cooled; and, above all, to guard

side of the bay: when the flood begins, a whirling current is remarked on the east side. The sea, when it is high, particularly at the equinoxes, fills up the sandy hollows and lagoons in several places round the city, which are planted with rhizophora, conocarpas, and avicenia trees. The sandy plain between the suburb of St Anna, the bay of Sacco d'Alferes, and the principal street towards St Christopher, is sometimes changed into a lake."—*Von Spix's Travels*, *vol.* i. p. 141.

The strong flood has more than once led the captains of ships to anchor too close in-shore, so that, when the ebb has set in, they have been in shallow water. An English ship from Liverpool was wrecked in this manner, in 1817, close to the Ilha das Cobras, being dashed to pieces on the rocks in a few hours.

against every species of excess or sensual gence.*

It is at present impossible to obtain an a estimate of the population of Rio. Before th val of the king, it is thought by some not t exceeded 50,000 souls; the number of blac people of colour considerably exceeding that whites. This proportion is now completely re "It may be considered as certain," says I Spix, "that, since the year 1808, 24,000 guese have gradually arrived here from Eu To these must be added, a considerable nun English, French, Dutch, Germans, and I who, after the opening of the ports, settled some as merchants, others as mechanics. A ber of English ship-builders and mechanics dish iron-workers, German engineers, and artists and manufacturers, were invited over Government. Mr Mawe rated the whole tion, including the negroes, at 100,000. I Spix states that, in the year 1817, the city dependencies contained about 110,000 inha Mr Henderson, in his recent work on Brazil the number at 150,000, about two-thirds of he thinks, are negroes, mulattoes, and othe ple of colour. Rio is still infamous as a m negro slaves. The trade, however, has be stricted by a decree of the emperor (when regent) to the kingdom of Angola, and he h clared his intention to abolish it altogether a as practicable. As soon as a slave-ship h

* Dr Von Spix endeavoured, but without success, cure lists of the deaths and burials, which would have some light on the alleged unhealthiness of the place, b ing the degree of mortality. But in what colonial would not the average number of deaths form a pres against the healthiness of the site?

its living cargo, the negroes are quartered in
hired for the purpose in Vallongo street,
he sea. There may be seen children from
ars of age upwards, and adults of both sexes,
ages, lying about half naked, exposed to the
the court-yard, or out of the houses; others
stributed in several rooms, the two sexes being
eparate. A mulatto or old negro who has
ed experience in long service, has the super-
ence of the food and other necessaries for
ew comers. They pass the night on straw
with blankets to cover them. A great num-
these slaves belong to the sovereign, and are
it as tribute from the African colonies. "Who-
vants to buy slaves, repairs to the Vallongo,
ke his choice, where every inspector draws
e slaves quite naked, for his examination.
purchaser endeavours to convince himself of
dily strength and health of the negroes, partly
ling their bodies, and partly by causing them
ecute rapid motions, particularly striking out
m with the fist doubled. What is most appre-
l in these purchases, are, hidden corporal de-
and especially the very frequent disposition
idness. When the choice is made, the pur-
money is fixed, which for a healthy male ne-
here from 350 to 500 florins; the seller ge-
making himself answerable for any corpo-
fects that may be discovered within a fort-
The purchaser then takes away his slave,
he destines, according as he wants him, to
nechanic, a mule-driver, or a servant. The
oprietor is now absolute master of the labour
slave and the produce of it. But if he is
of inhuman treatment of him, he is liable, as
ier civil offences, to be punished by the po-
the tribunals. The latter take care, by means
ly adopted for the purpose, to restore run-

away slaves to their right owners, and punish fugitives if they renew the attempt, by putting iron ring round their necks. If the master will punish his slaves himself, it is done, after payment a certain sum, by the police in the Calabongo. H however, as well as in Brazil in general, the negr easily become habituated to the country. This i consequence of their careless tempers, as well of the similarity of the climate to that of their na country, and the mildness with which they are trea in Brazil."*

COMMERCE OF RIO.

Rio is the great emporium of Brazilian commer especially of all the mining districts. All the m ports on the coast, northwards as far as Bahia, a southwards to Monte Video, send hither their produ for exportation to Europe, or home consumption. T quantity of provisions, in particular, annually import from all these places, is considerable: they consist farinha, beans, bacon, and dried or salt meat. T produce of their cattle, hides, horns, dried meat, t low, and bacon, with rice and wheat flour, come by s chiefly from the provinces of Rio Grande do Sul, a S. Paulo. The latter furnishes also cheese, the b of the mangrove-tree for tanning, with some gu cotton, sugar, and rum. St Catherine sends sole l ther, onions, garlic, dried fish, and pottery. T small harbours to the north of Rio, such as S. J do Paraiba, S. Salvador, Macahe, Porto Segu Caravelhas, Victoria, &c. supply Rio with a consi able quantity of vegetables, and fish, with the prod

* Von Spix's Travels, vol. i. pp. 178, 9. In the year 1 no fewer than 20,075 negroes are said to have been impo *into* Rio, under the Portuguese flag, from the ports of Gu and Mozambique.

their fine forests, in the shape of beams, planks, ps, Brazil-wood, bark, charcoal, &c. and vege- s; also tobacco, sugar, rum and coffee from S. ds tubs and casks made of the trunk of the gamel- ra (fig-tree). Ilha Grande [illegible] d pottery, and, as well as Cape [illegible] Bra- sends *slaves*, tobacco, [illegible] de of the fibres of the palm [illegible] rnambuco, salt, saltpetre, and [illegible] nenos Ayres and Monte Video [illegible] er, &c. and wheat [illegible] ncipally carried on in small [illegible] d keeps up a constant [illegible] razilian coast and the [illegible] e Plata to Rio, the [illegible] from twenty-two [illegible] d Rio Grande do S[illegible] venty days: from P[illegible] fteen; from Bahia [illegible] g as the wind [illegible] rth, which depends [illegible] is obvious, how [illegible] asting-trade has [illegible] maritime power. Par[illegible] pport all their pri[illegible] the case, in part, with Bahia [illegible] yres.

The inland trade between Rio and the neighbouring rovinces, especially with S. Paul and Minas, to hich there are tolerable roads, is very extensive. he latter sends its cotton, coffee, and tobacco chiefly Rio, though further from some parts than Bahia, e road being less difficult:† it exports also, besides precious stones, cheese, marmalade, brown sugar-

* Von Spix, vol. i. pp. 185-7.

† In 1820, Minas sent, of cotton, 70,407 arrobas; coffee, ,000; *tobacco, 54,281.*

loaves, and an enormous quantity of very coarse co
tons for clothing the slaves and poor shepherds of t
southern provinces. From Rio Grande do Sul a
S. Paulo, many thousands of oxen, houses, and mul
are annually driven to Rio. The inhabitants of t
remote provinces of Matto Grosso and Goyaz bri
gold in bars and dust, precious stones, and smuggl
diamonds (the article being contrabrand), to exchan
for European manufactures.*

To the smaller ports of Brazil, Rio exports all so
of European goods; to Pernambuco and Seara, som
times considerable quantities of vegetables; to t
northern provinces, great numbers of *slaves*; to t
Plata, immense quantities of coarse cloths; to bo
the western and eastern coasts of Africa, English an
Portuguese goods; to Europe, sugar, coffee, cotto
tobacco, hides, tallow, a few otters' skins, horse-ha
and hides, horn, rum, treacle, whale-oil and whal
bone, ipecacuanha, rice, cocoa, indigo, fustic-wood
log-wood, and ship timber. To these may be adde
among the more precious articles of export, gold
chains and other ornamental forms, diamonds, topaze
amethysts, tourmalines (often sold for emeralds), chry
soberyls, aqua marinas, and wrought jewellery. Th
cochineal was at one period becoming an importa

* "It is nothing uncommon," says Dr Von Spix, "to s
inhabitants of the deserts of Cujaba and Matto Grosso, w
have made a journey of 300 miles or more, leading back
ravans of mules laden with articles for the consumption of
interior. The Brazilian is not to be deterred by the dan
and fatigues of a journey which often separates him eigh
ten months from his family, from undertaking from time
time the management of his commercial affairs in person.
man who undertakes, almost weekly, a journey on horseb
of five or six Brazilian miles (about twenty or twenty-f
English), to attend mass at church, or to visit his neighbo
does not fear to travel several hundred miles, if necessary, t
exchange the harvest of one or of several years for the valua
productions of foreign countries."

e of commerce : but the trade was [illegible] ty of the cultivators, with [illegible] acclimated [illegible] ent and the [illegible] d-w [illegible] Dr V [illegible] ings, [illegible] are [illegible] ugese [illegible] Ri [illegible] cock [illegible] a this [illegible] ,00[illegible] he [illegible] or-g [illegible] ion of the [illegible] cia [illegible] he [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]

hats, silks, distilled liquors, medicines, preserved fruits, pottery from Oporto, Portuguese books, musical instruments, and paper, chiefly from Italy. In former times, East India goods were brought here in large quantities from Lisbon; but, at present, they are imported direct from India. A voyage thither and back is performed with great expedition. One large ship of 800 tons is stated by Mr Mawe to have sailed, loaded at Surat, and returned, within the space of seven months. A voyage to China seldom occupies a longer period. It is not improbable, therefore, that the port may eventually become an entrepôt for Indian goods destined for Europe. England (particularly London and Liverpool) and its colonies supply Rio with cotton goods, fine cloths, porcelain and earthenware, iron, lead, copper, tin (raw and wrought), anchors, cables, gunpowder, porter, cheese, salt butter, distilled liquors, &c. From Gibraltar are received many East India goods, and, in Portuguese ships, Spanish wines. France (chiefly Brest and Havre de Grace) sends trinkets, furniture, wax candles, drugs, liqueurs, pictures and prints, French books, silks, looking-glasses, hats, glass and china, dried fruits, oil, and butter. Holland sends beer, glass, linen, paper, and Geneva, which is much in request in the tropical countries on account of its diuretic quality. Austria* has sent, on speculation, watches, piano-fortes, muskets, linens, silks, velveteens, flannels, mortars, iron-hoops, fishing-hooks, pen-knives, quicksilver, wax, isin-glass, copper, brass, lead, tin, and antimony. The other parts of Germany, which formerly carried on a very extensive trade in Bohemian glass and linen with Spain and Portugal, have now tried the experiment of sending

* It was intended, Dr Von Spix says, on occasion of the marriage of the Archdutchess Leopoldina with Don Pedro, to establish a commercial intercourse with Austria, in which the two states were reciprocally to favour each other; but the plan was never brought to maturity.

ents of these goods direct to Brazil; they ed on a good trade, especially in Nuremberg in iron and brass utensils. Russia and Swe- iron, steel, copper utensils, sail-cloth, ropes, l tar. The Swedish iron is preferred to that and, on account of its greater ductility. North ends chiefly corn, flour, soap, salt provisions, i candles, train oil, biscuit, leather, boards, ish, and rude furniture. As the market for luctuating, the American cargoes are fre- aken ultimately to other ports, and the pro- commonly sent to the Cape. From Mo- besides slaves, Rio imports gold dust, ivory, dumbo root, ebony, cocculus indicus, and an of gums, particularly the gum *meni*. From id Benguela, wax, palm oil, Mundubi oil, hur, and some gum Arabic: the latter two d salt are the chief imports from the Cape slands. From Macao, the imports consist slins, printed cottons, silk stuffs, porcelain, ink, cinnamon, pepper, and camphor.

cock has given a table of the commerce compared with that of Bahia, for the year which it appears that, in that year, 1460 which 113 were British, 114 of other fo- ns, and the remainder Portuguese,) enter- t of Rio, and 519 (of which 57 were Bri- 11 foreign of other countries,) that of Ba- wards, the numbers were, 1232 from Rio), and 431 from Bahia.

of the principal exports in 1817, is given n Spix, which shews that, in that year, tal of value, in the five chief articles only, to 5,101,597,600 *rees* (about 1,350,400*l.* and the duty to 149,279,872 *rees*:* they

in of Brazil differs from that of Portugal. It is a *rees* (an imaginary coin), and the value of

consisted of 17,000 chests of sugar, 300,000 *arrobas** of coffee, 40,000 bales of cotton, 512,000 ox hides, and about 30,000 cwt. of tobacco. According to documents cited by M. Beauchamp, the imports had risen, in 1821, to 1,294,000 livres sterling, and the exports to 2,278,000 livres.

Rio is in lat 22° 54′ S. and long 43° 18′ W.

ENVIRONS OF RIO.

The vicinity of Rio presents some very fine scenery, in particular around the *Lagoa do Freitas*, where many of the inhabitants of the city have their country-houses. Near its northern end, the traveller passes under the precipitous peak of the Corcovado along a romantic valley. On the declivity of the chain of hills which stretches from the city towards the south-west, the Russian consul-general, M. Von Langsdorff,† had a small country house, at the time of Dr Von Spix's visit, commanding an enchanting prospect over the city and part of the bay. "Nothing," says this traveller

every piece is marked on it. There are copper coins of 10 and 20 *rees;* silver coins of 80 and 160 *rees:* the single and double *patacea* of 320, 640, and 960 rees. The new gold coins are all of 4000 *rees;* there are older ones of 1000, 2000, and 3000 *rees*. 100 rees of Portugal are equal to about 6*d*. English.

* An *arroba* contains 32 Portuguese pounds, about 32 lb. English. Four *arrobas* make one *quintal* = 129 1-2 lb. English. Corn and salt are measured by the *alqueire*, about ⅔ of a bushel English. 20 *alqueires* make 1 *moio*. Liquids are measured by *pipas* and *canadas*. A Brazilian *canada* = 5 1-7 Lisbon *canadas* = 2 English gallons. A *pipa* of port = 60 Brazilian (312 Lisbon) *canadas*. The measures of length are *varas* (5 of which = 6 yards English), and *covados* (27 = 20 yards English.)

† Known in the literary world as the companion of Commodore Krusenstern in his voyage round the world.

be compared to the beauty of this retreat, the most sultry hours of the day are past, gentle breezes, impregnated with balsamic per- from the neighbouring wooded mountains, the air. This enjoyment continues to increase e night spreads over the land and the sea, shines at a distance, and the city, where the of business has subsided, is gradually lighted. who has not personally experienced the enchant- of tranquil moonlight nights in these happy les, can never be inspired, even by the most l description, with those feelings which scenes ch wondrous beauty excite in the mind of the der. A delicate transparent mist hangs over ountry; the moon shines bright amid heavy ingularly grouped clouds; the outlines of the s which are illuminated by it, are clear and lefined, while a magic twilight seems to remove the eye those which are in shade. Scarcely ath of air is stirring, and the neighbouring mi-, that have folded up their leaves to sleep, motionless beside the dark crowns of the man- e jaca, and the ethereal jambos. Or some- a sudden wind arises, and the juiceless leaves e *acaju* (*Anacardium occidentale*) rustle, the flowered *grumijama* and *pitanga* (two kinds razilian myrtle) let drop a fragrant shower of white blossoms; the crowns of the majestic wave slowly over the silent roof which they ade, like a symbol of peace and tranquillity. cries of the cicada or grasshopper, and the rog make an incessant hum, and produce, by monotony, a pleasing melancholy. A stream murmuring, descends from the mountains, and acuc (*Perdix guyanensis*), with its almost hu- voice, seems to call for help from a distance. quarter of an hour, different balsamic odours e air, and other flowers alternately unfold their

consisted of 17,000 chests of
*bas** of coffee, 40,000 bales
hides, and about 30,000 cwt.
ing to documents cited by M
ports had risen, in 1821, to 1,2
and the exports to 2,278,000 li
Rio is in lat 22° 54′ S. and l

ENVIRONS OF

The vicinity of Rio present
nery, in particular around th
where many of the inhabita
their country-houses. Near
traveller passes under the p
Corcovado along a romantic
vity of the chain of hills v
city towards the south-we
general, M. Von Langsdo
house, at the time of D
manding an enchanting
part of the bay. "No

every piece is marked on
10 and 20 *rees*; silver coi
and double *patacca* of 32
gold coins are all of 4000
2000, and 3000 *rees*. 10
6*d*. English.

* An *arroba* contains
English. Four *arrobas* n
lish. Corn and salt are m
of a bushel English. 20
are measured by *pipas* and
= 5 1-7 Lisbon *canadas* =
port = 60 Brazilian (312 Lisl
length are *varas* (5 of whic
dos (27 = 20 yards English.)

† Known in the literary
modore Krusenstern in his

leaves to the night, and almost overpower the s
ses with their perfume. Now, it is the bowers
paullinias, or the neighbouring orange grove; th
the thick tufts of the *cupatoria*, or the bunches
the flowers of the palms suddenly bursting, wh
disclose their blossoms, and thus maintain a c
stant succession of fragrance. While the silent
getable world, illuminated by swarms of fire-fl
as by a thousand moving stars, charms the ni
by its delicious effluvia, brilliant lightnings play
cessantly in the horizon, and elevate the mind
joyful admiration to the stars, which, glowing
solemn silence in the firmament above the co
nent and ocean, fill the soul with a presentiment
still sublimer wonders. In the enjoyment of
peaceful and magic influence of such nights,
newly arrived European remembers with ten
longings his native home, till the luxuriant s
nery of the tropics has become to him a sec
country."*

Such are the charms of a tropical night, wh
Nature reserves half her fragrance, and more t
half her wonders, for the season of repose. A
companion piece to this nocturnal sketch, the r
der will be pleased to have presented to him
following description of a sunny ramble. "We
versed the principal street which leads through
quarter of Mato-porcos to the royal residen
S. Cristovão and Santa Cruz; and passing a hi
some country-seat, belonging to the bishop, we
cended the first hills of the Corcovado. Scar
were we beyond the streets and the noise of
town, when we stopped, as if enchanted, in
midst of a strange and luxuriant vegetation.
eyes were attracted, sometimes by gayly colo
birds or splendid butterflies, sometimes by the

* Von Spix's Travels, vol. i. pp. 160—2.

lar forms of the insects and the nests of wasps d termites hanging from the trees, sometimes by e beautiful plants scattered in the narrow valley, nd on the gently sloping hills. Surrounded by fty cassias, broad-leaved, white-stemmed cecropi-, thick-crowned myrtles, large-flowered bignonias, mbing tufts of the mellifluous paullinias, far-spread-g tendrils of the passion-flower, and of the richly owering hatched coronilla, above which rise the aving summits of Macaubu palms, we fancied our-lves transported into the gardens of the Hespe-des. Passing over several streams which were rned to good account, and hills covered with young ppice-wood, we at length reached the terrace of e eminence along which the spring water for the ty is conducted. A delightful prospect over the y, the verdant islands floating in it, the harbour ith its crowd of masts and various flags, and the ty stretched out at the foot of the most pleasant lls, the houses and steeples dazzling in the sun, as spread before our eyes. We dwelt long on e magical view of a great European city, rising ere amidst the profusion of tropical vegetation. We en pursued the road along the windings of the queduct. The channel is chiefly built of blocks granite, but the vaulted covering, within which e naturalist finds many of the most singular pha-ngia, is of brick. Between the woody hills there re diversified romantic prospects into the valleys elow. Sometimes you traverse open spots, where stronger light is reflected from the flowery ground, from the shining leaves of the neighbouring high ees; sometimes you enter a cool, shady bower. ere a thick wreath of paullinias, securidacæ, mi-nias, passion-flowers, adorned with an incredible mber of flowers, climb through the crowns of the ltis, the flowery rhexias and melastomas, bauhi-as, delicate mimosas, shining myrtles; there, bushy

nightshades, sebastanias, eupatorias, philas, and innumerable other plants, penetrable thicket, amidst which grow i of the silk cotton-tree (*bombax*), of cecropia, thorny Brazil-wood tree, of with its singular fruit resembling a pi stems of the cabbage palm, and many still unnamed, sovereigns of the wooc jestic sight, the repose and silence of interrupted only by the buzz of the g birds, fluttering from flower to flower singular notes of unknown birds and i liarly affect the mind of the man of sc feels himself as it were regenerated in of the glorious country.

"The stream which the aqueduct c city, falls in one place in beautiful casc granite rocks. Oblique-leaved begonia tus, and heliconias, the red flower st shine with peculiar splendour, contras gloom of the forest, arborescent ferns hanging bushes of vernonias, myrtle tomas, bending under a load of blo the cool spots that surround them. small winged butterflies play with the ter; and birds of the gayest plumage c ing and evening, to overcome the brook by their diverse notes. This called *Caryoca*,* and the natives of have from it the name of Caryocas, wh themselves with pride, but with whicl tants of the other provinces combine a cessory meaning. Ingenious poets of neiro, inspired by the beauties that

* "*Caryoca*, properly Caryb-oca, signifi guage of the natives, house of the whites; lit stone."

ing, have exerted themselves to celebrate by their
ngs, the Naiad who brings so beneficial a present
their native city.*

"At the cascade of Caryoca, the road turns aside
m the aqueduct, and leads over a dry eminence,
vered with low trees and shrubs, to the forest
ich clothes the ridge of the Corcovado. The
arrow, steep path passes over several streams.
he vegetation is uncommonly strong and luxuri-
t; but the higher we ascend, the large trees gra-
ally become more rare, and the bamboos and
ms more numerous, among which is a beautiful
rborescent fern, fifteen feet in height. When you
ve made your way through the last thicket, you
ach the green summit of the mountain, where
ingle shrubs, among which is a magnificent arbo-
scent vellosia, offer to the eye a vegetation re-
embling that of the higher campos of Minas. From
his spot there is a beautiful view, extending over
he woods, hills, valleys, and the city, to the sea,
he broad surface of which is lost in the distant
orizon. Towards the south, the mountain is bro-
ken, and the prospect loses itself in a steep de-
livity, bounded by the blue bay of Bota-Fogo; and
till further, the bold masses of the Sugar-loaf Moun-
ain close the horizon. At this elevation of about
wo thousand feet, the difference in the temperature
s already so sensible, that you fancy yourself trans-
orted to a colder zone. Several streams, flowing
om the ridge of the mountain, are always some
grees colder than the water in the aqueduct; and
the approach of sunset, the summit of the moun-
n is enveloped in clouds, which gradually sink into
valley.

"Another equally interesting excursion that we used

* Not far from the source the valley declines from Laran-
ja towards the suburb of Catete.

to make, was to Tijuca, a place about a mile from the city, which was formerly much frequented by the inhabitants. The way is on the high-road, past the royal country-seat of S. Cristovâo, which was built after his majesty's arrival, and by improvements in the grounds has been made a very agreeable retreat. The road lies between luxuriant hedges of castus, lantana, bougainvillia, cordia, tournefortia, and mimosa lebbeck, above which the aloes shoot up their lofty flowering stems. The country is level up to the foot of the mountain; only an insulated verdant conical rock, in the vicinity of the royal seat, is a picturesque object rising above the variegated gardens and plantations. To the west of the road, a new aqueduct conveys the water of a stream from the mountains into the city. Citizens and peasants, on foot and on horseback and frequently two persons mounted on one beast, give great animation to the road, on which the carriages of the rich can go only as far as S. Cristovâo. It is pleasing to see in this paradise, the traces of European industry, diligently cultivated land, and beautiful country-houses. Ascending the verdant slope of the mountain, and between numerous country-seats, along a mountain stream which turned several mills, we at last reached the summit, where the fatigue of the journey was rewarded with a fine view towards the suburb of S. Cristovâo."

The travellers obtained an indifferent lodging for the night, at the "seat" of a Frenchman, where they were obliged to content themselves with some roasted potatoes for supper, and a wooden bench for a bed. At day-break, they resumed their journey, and just as the sun was rising, found themselves at the declivity of a high rock, from which a crystal brook, partly dissolved into mist, fell from a height of nearly a hundred feet into the valley, reminding them of the cascades of Naples and Tivoli, "the ornaments of a similar, but far less rich and magnificent landscape." Continuing their journey south-south-west, towards the

site declivity of the
dly-wooded
e to the
; which rises
norim. Its
smooth
ly lakes of
zburg. The
bracki-h
sea, into
ntain
. Ob
of a
lake
bitants
ng the
tely
nsider
, and
s. but
t. and
in a
is.
the
l powder

The road
of
s ago
water.
ins
ide of the
a half
high
ern
as. The
suburbs at Bethel
healthy, on which account it is preferred by the rich inhabitants for their *chacras* country houses; and the road is equently much frequented.

The most important object of cultivation in is the Chinese tea-plant. When Dr Von S Rio in 1817, there were about six thous planted in rows about three feet asunder. ate seemed favourable to their growth. T planted, plucked, and dried precisely in the ner as in China itself. The Portuguese g had directed its particular attention to the of this plant. The Conde de Linhares, w ter, invited several hundred Chinese colonis by their means to make the proper manner and preparing tea better known. "Thes were said not to have been any of the inhabi coast, who leave their country from poverty Java and the neighbouring islands, there work, like the Galicians in Spain and Por people from the interior had been chosen, perfectly acquainted with the management plant. Most of these Chinese, however, live about the botanic garden, but in the vic royal residence of Santa Cruz, except a fe employed here under the direction of Colo to tend the tea-plants, and gather and pr leaves. The leaves are plucked three tim and laid on gently heated kilns of clay, on are dried and crisped. The taste was stro no means so delicately aromatic as the be Chinese tea, but rather earthy and rough. agreeable property must, however, not l couragement in any branch of cultivation natural consequence of the plants not bein accustomed to the climate."*

* A curious manuscript of the date of 1578, Southey, states, that tea had been found wild in th hood of Bahia, of similar quality to that of Chin ter refers to this, and adds, that a priest of consid tation as a botanist, thought he had discovered thi neighbourhood of Olinda, but afterwards feared

'royal farm" of Santa Cruz, which is fifty th-west of Rio, was formerly a Jesuit convent. 'e, who visited it during its residence in Bra- 08, by desire of the regent, draws a not very picture of this royal domain. The house is rge nor handsome. It is built in a quadran- n, with an open court in the centre, and gal- ide, attached to the first and second floors. ns thirty-six apartments; but, as they were intended for the use of the brotherhood, they l and inconvenient. "In front of the house, outhward," continues Mr Mawe, "extends ie finest plains in the world, two leagues 'atered by two rivers navigable for small craft, ded by fine, bold, rocky scenery, embellished parts with noble forest trees. This plain is vith the richest pasture, and supports from eight thousand head of cattle. A consider- of it lies low, and abounds with bogs, which sily be laid dry, and rendered susceptible of n by proper drainage. The park occupies, e extent, upwards of one hundred square miles: ' almost as large as some of the principalities and capable, by its proximity and connexion capital both by land and water, of being ren- ' of the most productive and populous in Bra- ler the present system of management, it is gressive state of deterioration. Two small he best of the land, one about half a league id the other more than a league square, en already, through disingenuous arti- l off; and the rest may in no long time, be to men whose cupidity stimulates them to e its value, unless proper means are used to eir nefarious designs.

negroes on this estate, including all descrip-

ie. Whether it is indigenous to Brazil, appears *oubtful.*

tions, amount to about 1500 in number. They general a very excellent class of men, tractab gentle in their dispositions, and by no means de in intellect. Great pains have been taken to e en them: they are regularly instructed in the ples of the Christian faith, and have prayers p read to them morning and evening, at the comm ment and close of their day's labour. Plots of g at their own choice, are assigned to each; an days in the week, besides the incidental holida allowed them to raise and cultivate produce fo own subsistence: the rest of their time and la devoted to the service of his highness. The of management, however, is so bad, that they a starved, almost destitute of clothing, and most ably lodged; their average earnings do not am a penny per day each. A reform in the est ment might have been easily effected on the ar the Prince Regent; but it will now be very di as the abuses have been tacitly sanctioned by difference of those whose duty and interest it correct them. In this extent of fine ground, sc an enclosure is made; the cultivated lands are weeds, and the coffee-plantations are little bett a mere coppice-wood, in which the wild shrubs higher than the coffee-trees. The cattle are m plorably neglected, and there is not upon the premises a horse fit for the meanest beggar t Such was the state in which I found this rich a tensive district, which seems to have been dest nature for the introduction of improvement might produce, through the influence of hig ample, an entire change in the agricultural sys Brazil."

The Regent, anxious to retain Mr Mawe in vice, offered him the management of this est advantageous terms; but that traveller had oth jects in view, and eventually declined it. Dr

, who visited it nine years after, found it still in same neglected state. "They have not yet succeed," he says, "in making a dairy in the European manner; and the King, who possesses in his very nbourhood one of the finest herds of cows, must ent himself with Irish salt butter, which has perred a voyage of several months." Santa Cruz, hich, a short time before, had been conferred the and privilege of a town, is situated on a flat sandy ence, entirely surrounded by a marshy plain, and ists, with the exception of the royal palace, of no; but wretched clay huts, containing a few hun- inhabitants. A royal manufacture of charcoal recently been established here. The few ining Chinese settlers introduced by the Conde Linhares, had made round their low huts, which very neat inside, little plantations, adorned with coffee-plant, and their favourite flower, the jessa-. But the botanic garden, or nursery, was little r than a desolate wilderness, and the kitchen garnear the palace appeared not better attended to. ness and regret for their native country had carriff many of the Chinese, and dislike of their situahad induced others to disperse.

rs Graham, who visited Santa Cruz in 1823, found place somewhat improved, but the Chinese had peared. The tea-gardens, which occupy many s of a rocky hill, have been adorned by the presovereign of Brazil with Chinese gates and sum-houses, to correspond to their original design; "placed among the beautiful tea-shrubs, whose shining leaves and myrtle-like flowers fit them parterre, they have," says this traveller, "no easing effect. The walks are bordered on either l with orange-trees and roses, and the garden hedge beautiful kind of mimosa; so that the *China* of ta Cruz forms really a delightful walk. The Em-

peror, however, who perceives that it is more advantageous to sell coffee and buy tea, then to grow it at such expense, has discontinued the cultivation." The plants are, nevertheless, still thriving; and, in the neighbourhood, Mrs Graham states, "wild tea" is found even more beautiful than the elegant Chinese shrub.

The estate of Santa Cruz,* which is seven miles in length, extends over a finely varied surface, watered by the rivers Guandu (great bay), and Taguahy (yellow water). The latter gives its name to the little Indian village (*aldea*), of San Francisco Xavier de Itaguahy, formed by the Jesuits not long before their expulsion, and finely situated on the summit of a hill at the further end of the plain. At the foot of the hill, a very fine *engenho* is turned by the stream. Mrs Graham entered several of the huts, which are very poor, barely

* The road to Santa Cruz crosses a little hill to the left of S. Cristovão, and then enters on an extensive plain. At Venda Grande, seven miles from the city, the road divides; the branch to the right leading to Minas Geraes, the other to St Paul's and the south-west. The latter is the road to Santa Cruz: it winds at the base of small, woody hills, until it reaches other plains four miles in extent, called the *Campinha*, the soil of which is a washed sand, formed by a decomposition of granite, and having the appearance of being once covered by the sea. The Venda of Campinha is reckoned the first stage from Rio: it is a distance of about eighteen miles. A league further of very pretty road leads to the *Engenho* (sugar-works) *dos Affonsos*,—an extensive estate, but only partially cleared. A few miles beyond its boundary, is the new church of S. Antonio de Lameron, on a little hill, overlooking a neat village and a pretty country. Beyond this place lies the *Engenho* of Mata Patiencia, where has been erected an eight-horse-power steam-engine, "one of the first, if not the very first erected in Brazil;" besides the rollers in the sugar house, several saws are moved by it. Between two and three hours further brings the traveller to Santa Cruz.

weather-tight, and with little furniture besides hammocks and cooking utensils. But all the floors were cleanly swept, and a log of wood or a rude stool was generally to be found for the stranger, the people themselves squatting on the ground. The population appears to be decreasing, many of the half-civilised Indians having returned to their savage habits, on the departure of the Jesuits. The Guandu rises in the mountain of Marapicu, in the barony of Itanhae, and having received the Tingui, passes to the *engenho* of Palmares, where there is a wharf from which the produce of the neighbouring estates, is conveyed to Sepetiva, a little port in the bay of Angra dos Reys, about seven miles from Santa Cruz, and a twenty-four hours' passage from Rio. In 1810, there was an intention of uniting the Guandu to the Itaipu by a short canal, by which means the navigation would have been direct to Rio; but the design was abandoned.*

To return to Rio. The royal residence of S. Cristovão (formerly called the *quinta* of Boavista) stands on a gentle eminence, nearly surrounded by high and picturesque mountains, and commands a fine, though distant view of the bay of Rio, the city, the northern mountains, and the plain of Matoporcos. A private merchant was building it, when the Prince Regent arrived as an exile from Lisbon, and he presented it to his sovereign.† In front of it is placed a gateway, sent to the prince (now

* Mr Luccock, referring either to this, or to a third river flowing from the plains of Santa Cruz into this bay, states, that a British ship of ninety guns had ascended the river to that point. The mouth of the Tagnahy is about two miles further westward, and these two rivers were connected, he says, by a canal, in the time of the Jesuits.

† So Mr Luccock informs us. Mrs Graham states, that the palace once belonged to a convent, which appears to be an error.

King John VI.) by the Duke of Northumberland, —an exact copy of that leading to Sion House. The effect is singularly incongruous. The gates are placed in the centre, between pillars of Brazilian granite, with a lodge on each side: the remainder of the screen is formed by palisades of Portuguese workmanship. The court in front of the palace, however, instead of being entered by the gateway, is accessible only by a road which enters at the left corner; for that which should form a road to the gateway, has been allowed to remain in its natural state of hollow and uneven ground, overgrown with underwood. "At present," says Mr Henderson, "the gates are in disuse, the lodges closed, and with the aid of the dirt and gunpowder arising from the fireworks ranged along their front on occasions of religious festivals, the whole already appears in a course of dilapidation. The palace is one story high, perfectly plain, without any pretensions to elegance, or the semblance of any order of architecture, and can boast of nothing but the beauty of its situation. It might, indeed, be mistaken at a distance for a manufactory, in consequence of the windows being so crowded together, particularly at night, when it is lighted up."

Mr Luccock describes it as small, formal, and ill contrived, but possessing the great advantage of varandas or colonnades, on three sides, with glass windows which can be closed or laid open at pleasure. Since these travellers visited Rio, however, the palace has been greatly enlarged and improved under the superintendence of Mr Johnson, who came to Brazil with the Duke of Northumberland's present. A more uniform appearance has been given to the building, which is somewhat in the *Moresco* style, and the whole is coloured yellow, with white mouldings. The court is planted with weeping wil-

vs. Behind the palace is a farm, which, when ited by Mrs Graham in 1823, appeared in good ler; "and the village of the slaves, with its little urch, looked more comfortable," she says, "than could have believed it possible for a village of .ves to do. The Imperial family now live entirely re, and go to town only on formal business or occa- ns of state."

BAY OF RIO.

It is not twenty years since all around the Bay f Rio de Janeiro there appeared an interminable rest. At this period (1808), only two boats and bout a dozen canoes plied upon the water for ire. St Domingo and Praya Grande, on the op- osite side of the Bay, were small pleasant villa- es, consisting of a few scattered houses embosomed 1 woods. Little cultivated land was discernible in ie wide landscape. The advance of the city on pots so recently covered with wood, surprised even ie inhabitants. The shores of the Bay, which is tated to be not less than thirty-two leagues in cir- umference, are still imperfectly described. Some f the smaller inlets have been compared to Syd- ey Cove in New Holland; and "something like he whole," says Mr Luccock, "but on a smaller cale, is said to exist in Asia Minor, near to Crete:" ie refers, possibly, to the Gulf of Marmorice.— 'Nothing that I have ever seen," says Mrs Gra- am, "is comparable in beauty to this bay. Na- les, the Firth of Forth, Bombay harbour, and 'rincomalee, each of which I thought perfect in ieir beauty, all must yield to this, which surpasses ich in its different way." In the bay of St Chris- phe, one of the smaller bays which branch from is the *Sacco*, or little recess of Gamboa, where the beautiful spot which has been chosen for the

Protestant burial-ground. It is called the *Pra de Gamboa*, and the last-mentioned traveller describes it as one of the loveliest spots she ever beheld. It slopes gradually towards the road alo the shore, commanding beautiful views in every direction. "At the highest point, there is a pret building, consisting of three chambers: one serv as a place of meeting or waiting for the clergym occasionally; one as a repository for the mourn furniture of the grave; and the largest, which is b tween the other two, is generally occupied by t body of the dead for the few hours, it may be day and a night, which can in this climate elap between death and burial.* In front of this a the various stones, and urns, and vain memoria we raise to relieve our own sorrow; and betwe these and the road are some magnificent tree Three sides of this field are fenced by rock wood." A British church,† a British hospital, a a British burial-ground, are the appropriate mon ments of our countrymen in this part of the ne world.

* "The first funeral service was performed in April 181 which was too soon followed by others. They seemed have a great effect on the minds of the Brazilians wh witnessed them. The situation, ill fitted for a cemeter would have been a fine one for a residence."—*Luccock Notes*, p. 258.

† The foundation stone of the first protestant church South America was laid at Rio on the 12th Aug. 1819, a dedicated to St George and St John, in honour of the sov reigns of England and Brazil. This site is in the *Rua d Borbanes*. On this occasion, a great portion of the Engli resident merchants attended, and an appropriate address w delivered by the Rev Mr Crane. The architect was J Johnson, who superintended the alterations of S. Cristov the builder a Portuguese. Previously to the erection of th building, the English assembled for divine service in a room —*Henderson's History*, p. 96.

bay of S. Christophe is separated by *Praia* fine elevated tongue of land, from the *Ca* ia, which takes its name from a small *Penha* further extremity. *Ponte Grande* d, and there are still traces of the narrow which connected the two capes. A fine says Mr Luccock, "was the ancient eiro to the main land, and rendered the passage he point still more difficult. Close under ne island of Villegagnon, the current whole weight of the ocean, rolling from the attrition of the waves. The ks which three centuries ago, many sentinels, and many sentinel ves. A large battery, called the winter of 1711, and the ward of these, called *Praia do* go, is often rendered f, which may be seen at a great ss."

boldly projecting point, part elevation of the land, and the Lo- stand the Lo- founded by Me- ed in the Bay of Rio de made by the Portuguese and French war which commenced in 1555.

new Rua Direita, parallel to the coast, with a tively recent origin. The *Sacco* ares formerly ran through the *Campo* da na and the space now from the public gardens. nnel was filled up by the accumulation of sand from *co da Gloria*. In 1750, the *Largo da Lapa* was ater. In 1790, a stream passed eastward from Mata to the harbour, and half a century later, the *Campo* Anna was marshy. The isthmus between the bay of nna and that of Praya Grande was a channel deep for a brig in 1568.

had only one gun, and for balls, hard, rounded

This is the only place in the immediate neighbourhood of Rio where there are still remains of the once numerous native tribes. The present inhabitants are stated to be descendants of converted Indians brought hither by the Jesuits from the district of Goytacazes. They are employed in making earthen vessels for cookery, for which the city furnishes a market. "Like their ancestors, who excelled in the same art three centuries ago, they use no machinery in moulding the clay, but bring it into shape by twirling their thumbs. The women attend the ovens, and bake the pans with care and skill. No glazing is used, yet they bear the fire well." The necessary smoothness is produced by means of a small sea-shell which they wet with their lips.

Prince Maximilian of Wied Neuwied, who visited this village in 1815, gives the following description of the inhabitants. "The greater part of these people still evidently retain their genuine Indian physiognomy: others, on the contrary, seem to be rather of a mixed descent. The distinguishing characteristics of the Brazilian race, which I first observed here, but, in the sequel, always found confirmed, are,—a moderate-sized, often small, well-formed body, in the man, strong-limbed and muscular; a reddish or yellowish-brown colour; very thick, long, coal-black, lank hair; a broad face often with the eyes placed rather obliquely, but frequently handsome, with strongly marked features, and for the most part rather thick lips; their hands and feet small and well-formed; and the men have thin strong beards. The walls of the huts are constructed of lattice-work of staves, the intervals being filled up with clay: the roofs are covered with leaves

stones; yet he succeeded in beating off the assailant with great slaughter.

f the cocoa palm. The furniture is very simle. Rush mats, laid on rude tressels, supply the lace of beds: sleeping nets, made of cotton lines, hich were used by them in former times, are still ccasionally seen. Both these kinds of beds have een adopted by the lower classes throughout Brail. Large pots called *talha*, in which water is kept onstantly cool, are in use here, as in the whole ountry: they are made of a porous clay, through hich the water slowly filters, and being condensed n the outside of the vessel, keeps that within cool. To these vessels belongs the half of a cocoa-nut hell, with a wooden handle fixed in it to serve as a ladle. Some earthen pots for cooking, called *panellas; cuias*, or gourd shells, to be used as plates; with several trifling articles of dress, and perhaps a gun or a bow and arrows for the chase, constitute the rest of the furniture. All these people are partly supported by their plantations of mandioc and maize."* Mr Luccock describes them as mild, but, though thus industriously occupied, indolent. They are very expert in the use of the bow, frequently substituting round balls of clay for arrows. In rowing and managing the canoe, they are equally dexterous. They have, for the most part, lost their own language and manners, and have adopted those of their conquerors. Some of the old men, however, still converse pretty fluently in the aboriginal dialect.

About a mile nearer to the point of Armazem, lies the estate presented by the King of Portugal, when regent, to Sir Sydney Smith. The house is small, the situation oppressively hot, the land rocky, and of small value. "At the point itself are some

* Travels in Brazil: by Prince Maximilian of Wied Neuweid. 4to. 1820. pp. 30—4.

large warehouses, originally constructed for th traction of oil from the whale, when that fish his enormous bulk in the harbour of Rio." whales frequent the Brazilian coast in great nun but they no longer enter this bay.

Although no large river discharges itself int Bay, a number of small streams, many of them gable to some distance, have their outlet to the upper end of it. Among these are, the . which issues from one of the small lakes, ar fords navigation with the tide to its port of the name; the *Mirili** (little water), which trave marshy country, and is navigable only for miles in a direct line to its port of the same n the *Sarapuhi*, navigable only for about a le the *Iguassu*, navigable for four leagues, and ing for its tributary the *Iguare*, which affords gation for a mile to the port of the same nam *Maraby*,† flowing from the Serra of Boavista

* In its common state, Mr Luccock says, the *Mir* scarcely any current, and is very shallow even at its but there are seasons in which it swells so as to becom gerous. The soil on its banks is very rich, and produce dant crops of sugar, milho, and mandioc.

† This is, apparently, the "noisy rivulet" refer but not named, by Mr Luccock, to which he ascribes t mation of the alluvial soil of the rich plains of Oitu crossed the stream at a considerable distance from its where a great road enters the interior. Immediatel crossing it, he began to ascend a formidable pass, by zigzag path, making fourteen turns, yet so steep, tha the highest point of the ladder (an elevation of abou feet), he threw with ease a stone over all the stages. cattle, in their way to Rio, descend this pass, and seve dents are frequent. On the right of this pass, a great cone towers nearly 2000 feet higher. From this sp road advances nearly sixty miles in a westerly direction Paraiba, through a broken and thinly inhabited country principal places lying on it are Pao Grande and Uva.— *&c.* p 301.

navigable to the port of Couto, three leagues above its mouth; it receives the *Dos Ramos*, which is navigable for eight miles to the skirts of the Serra Mantiqueira, in which it originates; the *Inhumirim*, navigable for three leagues to the flourishing port of Estrella; the *Suruhy** (rapid water), issuing from the Organ Mountains, and navigable by boats for seven miles; the *Iriry*† (river of shells), which

* The mouth of the Suruhy is stated by Mr Luccock to be about sixty yards wide; its bed is shallow, sometimes bordered by marshes, but, in general, the land is bold and lofty. The current was so strong, owing to recent rain, that, during three hours of hard labour, they were able to advance only two miles. On the right margin is the parish of St Nicolau, comprising a mountainous district of ten miles from north to south, by three in width, partly planted with mandioc, rice, and coffee, but principally famed for the banana fruit, which it yields in great abundance. "Of ten decent houses below the church of St Nicholas, four are vendas, sufficiently filled with the crews of saveiros; a circumstance which shews that the population and commerce of the neighbourhood must be considerable. Here the river is about forty yards wide, and is joined by a stream (the Goya) nearly half as large: down both of them are brought for exportation, vegetables, fruit, milho, and firewood."—*Notes*, p. 342, 3.

† "The Iriri is a hundred yards broad at the mouth, and more than commonly abundant in fishes. The right bank is, for some distance, low, flat, and muddy, forming a soil for the growth of mangue. About a mile within it, we found many saveiros taking in shells, which are carried away to be converted into lime. Over the bed in which they lie, is a stratum of stiff, but unconsolidated clay, nearly four feet thick. The bed itself is not more than six or eight inches in depth, and the shells appear as though they had not long been buried, without any marks of decay or petrifaction: among them is no mixture of clay or sand. Immediately beyond this spot is some bold ground; but a little further onward, the stream makes its way through pestiferous marshes, covered with mangue, and seems occasionally to flow with violence. Where it meets the tide, there is a broader expanse of water, with a bank in the midst of it; and the conflux, it is probable, sometimes forms a dangerous whirlpool. At one of the an-

comes from marshy land, and has a navigation only two miles; the *Magêassu*, which descends fro the Organ Mountains, bathes the town of Mag which gives name to it, and has a navigation of t miles; the *Iguapimirim*, descending from the san mountains;* the *Guapiassu*, or *Macacu*, one of th largest streams which fall into the bay, and nav gable for fifteen leagues, during which it receiv several tributaries from the same mountains; th *Guaxindiba*, flowing from the Serra Taypu; an the *Emboassu*, which has its source in the Ser St Gonsalo, and is navigable with the tide for a sho distance.

By means of these streams, different parts of th country to the northward of the capital may l visited with considerable facility. Mr Luccock, t whom we are indebted for the greater portion o our information relative to this part of the countr made an aquatic excursion for the purpose of ex

gles of the river into which we were hurried by the curre we sounded and found nearly fifty feet of water. Havi ascended about eight miles, we got into a sort of gutter, n twice the width of our boat, with marshy ground on each si of it to a great extent. From the roof of our boat we cou discern, over the mangue, the broad sail of a saveiro, an the tiles of a hut, about 400 yards distant. We shoute and fired several shots as signals for a canoe to come to o relief, for the boat could proceed no further, and the mar was too soft to walk upon. At and beyond the spot whe the hut stood, it was, no doubt, more solid. Round abo it is a wild screen of mountains, and among them the Org Pipes rose before us in all their rugged grandeur. The seei ing impossibility of reaching the house, and of procuring a sistance from it, the approach of evening, the ebbing of t tide, and the annoyance of myriads of insects, compelled us return with our chief object unattained."—*Luccock's Note* pp. 344, 5.

* Near the right bank of this river, is the parish of Ajud the soil of which is remarkably fertile, and is planted wi mandioc, rice, and coffee.

these waters. He ascended the Iguassu iderable distance by means of a canoe. It ine, broad, deep river, flowing in a very l channel, with so strong a current, at all hat, were it not for its curving direction, no it is supposed, would be able to stem it. In iny season, it flows with impetuosity, and breaks its bounds. "On both sides, its are covered with tall aquatic plants, whose serve further to discolour a stream which is from its source. When floods prevail, these of vegetables are torn from their roots by bulent waters, carried downwards by the cur- nd thrown on shore near the mouth of the where they serve to extend such marshes as on which they grew. In more tranquil sea- hey stand erect, and form a sort of lane of eds with curious bulbular heads, and serve as eat to a great variety of water-fowls. About miles from its mouth, this river is joined by *ilar*, from the north-east, which has already near to a few small houses and one spacious g, forming a village of the same name (Our of Pilar). Two miles further up, we gain st firm footing on the banks of the Iguassu, on the left hand, stands a small Benedic- onvent, pleasantly situated under the shade onsiderable hill, but with its estate so grossly ted, that the chief object seems to be the nance of a *venda* and an extensive brick-

After rowing six hours longer, we reached *orto dos Sareiros;* so named from the ves- rom ten to forty tons burden, which ascend ar to take in the cargoes brought hither by . It lies at the foot of considerable hills; one ich I climbed, and from its summit over- plains twelve miles long, and six or seven and the river which we had ascended thus

far, writhing among them like a snake. H exchanged our launch for a canoe, in wh reached the bridge of Maranbaya, after a t progress of other six hours. At this place, th is about twenty feet wide, while, at the conv at Porto dos Saveiros, it is thrice that width, its mouth full two hundred yards."* The upp watered by this river is elsewhere described traveller as in general sandy; but, being occa overflowed in many parts, a black sediment fit for the growth of rice. The surface is bro numerous abrupt round hills, called, from their half-oranges.

The Inhumirim, which Mr Luccock ascen Porto d'Estrella, is described as a fine riv ning in a deep bed with a sluggish channel, high, rugged lands, and bold, rocky masses rated, in many places, by broad swamps. entrance, on the right, lies a pile of broken which appear as if they had been tossed considerable distance, and had fallen on each "Some of the rounded masses seem to hav broken by their mutual concussion, and the fragments lie by the side of each other; and, a broad, flat stone has been undermost, i in some instances, been split in a ray-like fr and partly sunk into the soil. Such appearanc common in the country surrounding the Uppe and unite to shew that many parts now detach each other, once formed large solid masses, a they were removed from their native situation in that state." The shores of this river, as of its tributaries, of which there are severa

* Luccock's Notes, &c. pp. 338, 9.

† One of these, the *Jaguamirim*, flowing from the es, affords navigation for six miles. Another, the *Sa na*, descends from the serra of the same name, and is

ell cultivated. At its mouth, it is two hundred yards ide; at the port, not more than seventy. It is con-ected by a channel with the river Pilar, which flows to the Iguassu.

RIO TO PARAIBA NOVA.

Porto d'Estrella, situated in the angle of the con-luence of the Saracuruna with the Inhumirim, is a place of considerable traffic, being on the main road o the mines. Mr Luccock thus describes its state in 1816. "Though it has not many houses, some of them are uncommonly good ones. The church" (or chapel of Our Lady) "stands on a round precipitous hill, about two hundred feet above the level of the water, and has an advantage in situation, which it wants in point of size, commanding extensive views of rich plains towards the south and west, and of mountains covered with forests to the north. Here are two quays and suitable warehouses, from which is embarked for the capital most of the produce of the interior. As the principal roads of the country begin or terminate at this spot, here also are landed, and loaded on the backs of mules, all the goods destined for the northern part of the capitania of Rio de Ja-neiro, for Minas Geraes, Matto Grosso, and Goyaz, —for places, some of which are 1500 or 2000 miles distant. The village is, in consequence, full of mules, their drivers, and people collected from almost every part of the central provinces; the sides of the river are crowded with *saveiros* (small vessels); new lands are enclosed and cultivated, new societies formed, and the people advance in knowledge and civilization. The first time I visited this spot, since which several

le only for a league. The *Figueyra*, a third, comes from erra Frade; and boats go up very near its source, where it as the name of *Cayoaba*.

years have elapsed, we found the inhabitants that we thought it prudent to haul off from th to sleep on our arms aboard, and to appoint for the night. We were also plagued with toes beyond endurance. Since that period received here all the attentions which a st entitled to expect, and enjoyed a variety of which the growing wealth of the place has to collect. It has imbibed the spirit of a fare in more respects than one, having be only civil, but independent, frank, and hau measure by no means common in Brazil."*

The novel sight (to a European) of the l of mules laden with chests and packages from the interior or returning, is thus des another modern traveller.

"The European, accustomed to the con considerable burthens in waggons, is astonis sight of so many cargoes divided into sma which are abandoned to the discretion of t or of an unskilful driver, daily loaded and several times, either in the open air or in sheds, scarcely protected against the rain weather, and often carried in this manne hundred miles. The caravans (*tropas*), particularly on the better road from Saint Minas to the capital, are so well organ comparatively very little risk is to be app Each caravan, consisting of from twenty to f is conducted by an *arreiro* on horseback:

* Luccock's Notes, pp. 340, 1. Dr Von Spix, Porto d'Estrella in 1817, gives a strangely differen the place in some respects. "There is always a g business going on here, and it is therefore very s there is not a single good dwelling-house, or ev magazine for the goods. Every body must subs shelter in a wretched, scarcely-covered shed, wher likewise deposited."—*Travels*, vol. i. p. 234.

the necessary orders for the caravan to set out, to halt, or to encamp for the night; takes care that the burthens are well balanced, and the pack-saddles in good condition; repairs them when they gall, cures the sick beasts, and attends to the shoes. Under him are the drivers (*toccadores*), each of whom, generally, has to manage a division (*lote*) of seven mules. They go on foot, put the burthens off and on, feed and water the animals, drive them to the pasture, and cook the provisions. The *arreeo*, generally a free mulatto, frequently attends to the sale and purchase of goods in the city, and acts as commissioner for the proprietor of the caravan. The drivers are for the most part negroes, who soon become accustomed to the employment, and prefer this wandering life to the labour of gold-washing and working in the plantations."* The most important articles of trade brought hither by the inhabitants of Minas Geraes, who are called *Mineros*, are raw cotton and coarse cotton stuffs. On account of the great traffic between this port and the capital, boats set out daily from Rio between seven and twelve o'clock, as soon as the sea-breeze springs up, and arrive at Porto d'Estrella in the evening: they leave the latter place every evening after sunset, sail through the night, and reach the city by daybreak.

About four miles to the north-east of Porto d'Estrella is the parish of Our Lady of Piedade d'Inhomirim, situated at the angle of the confluence of this river with the small river Cruz. In this district is the *Mandioca* estate, purchased by the Russian consul-general, M. V. Langsdorff, for 1000*l.*, and estimated to be ten square miles in extent. The road to Piedade lies through a low country, between hedges of the richest variety of shrubs, having on the left hand a range of mountains clothed with thick forests:

* Von Spix's Travels, vol. i. pp. 232, 3.

on the right, the broad valley gently declines toward the sea. At Piedade, a village consisting of several scattered houses and a chapel, the road enters on a verdant plain, bounded by gardens, plantations, and meadows, with the massy summits of the Organ Mountains in the background: it gradually rises, passing over low woody hills, as it approaches the mountains. The Mandioca estate, so called from the excellence of the mandioc roots cultivated here, is bounded on the north-west by a chain of mountains traversed by several narrow dells, and covered with woods, which extend from the valley to the lofty summits of the Organ range. In the midst of these great forests are the tracts (*rossados*) which, after burning the felled trees, are planted with mandioc, maize, beans, coffee, &c. These plantations are generally abandoned after a few harvests, and in the course of a few years are covered again with a thick brushwood. The primeval forests, which stand as testimonies of the productive energies of the new continent in all their original wildness, still unprofaned by human hands, are called in Brazil, *mato virgen*, virgin forests. We shall have frequent occasion to refer to this feature of Brazilian scenery; but this seems a proper place to introduce the description given by Dr Von Spix and other travellers, of the wonders of

A BRAZILIAN FOREST.

The prevailing character of these sylvan regions is a magnificence of which the untravelled European can form no conception, arising not so much from the majestic productions with which they abound, as from the infinite diversity in the forms and colours of stems, leaves, and blossoms, which every where presents itself, and the luxuriance of the never-ceasing power

[illegible]

groupes agreeably contrasted by the di
forms and tints. Here and there, the
a Chilian fir (*araucaria imbricata*), a
er green, appears like a stranger amic
the tropics; while the towering stem
with their waving crowns, are an inco
ment of the forests,* the beauty and n
no language can describe.

"If the eye turns from the proud fo
cient denizens of the forest, to the m
lower which clothe the ground with a
is delighted with the splendour and ga
flowers. The purple blossoms of the
clusters of the melastoma, myrtles, an

* The cocoa-palm is frequently seen abov
Mr Mawe measured a fallen tree, (he does
species,) which was full seventy-six inches
thick end, and above twenty-five yards i
Maximilian says: "The colossal trees are
fowling-pieces could not carry to the top of
often fired in vain at the finest birds.' *Tra*

Mr Luccock describes a very singular tre
vegetable productions," he says, "whose s
English traveller. It is here called a *ga*
gamella, a great wooden bowl or trough,
its trunk are turned those large bowls which
The smallest part of its stem was eight feet
and there the circumference measured fourt
diately below this line, the roots begin to p
ner of buttresses, and produce that kind of
particularly esteemed in forming the knee
These terminate in the roots, which run alo
the ground, and appear above it in a cir
paces, each of which was intended to meas
of these roots, at the distance of sixteen fee
the tree, rose wholly above the soil: its gir
feet. The branches, which begin to exp
above the line where the trunk was measure
side thirty-five feet, so that the whole head f
ed hemisphere of more than 200 feet in c
Notes, &c. p. 393.

the delicate foliage of many rubiaceæ and ardisiæ, their pretty flowers blended with the singularly formed leaves of the theophrasta; the conchocarpus; the reed-like dwarf palms; the brilliant spadix of the costus; the ragged hedges of the maranta, from which a squamous fern rises; the magnificent stiltia, thorny solana, large flowering gardenias and coutereas, enlivened with garlands of mikonia and bignonia; the far-spreading shoots of the mellifluous paullinias, dalechampias, and the bauhinea with its strangely lobated leaves; strings of the leafless milky *lianes* (bind-weed); which descends from the highest summits of the trees, or closely twine round the strongest trunks, and gradually kill them; lastly, those parasitical plants by which old trees are invested with the garment of youth, the grotesque species of the pothos and the arum, the superb flowers of the orchideæ, the bromelias which catch the rain water, the tillandsia, hanging down like *lichen ulmonarius*, and a multiplicity of strangely formed ferns; all these admirable productions combine to form a scene which alternately fills the European naturalist with delight and astonishment.

"But the animal kingdom which peoples those ancient forests, is not less distinguished than the vegetable world. The naturalist who is here for the first time, does not know whether he shall most admire the forms, hues, or voices of the animals. Except at noon, when all living creatures in the torrid zone seek shade and repose, and when a solemn silence is diffused over the scene illumined by the dazzling beams of the sun, every hour of the day calls into action a distinct race of animals. The morning is ushered in by the howling of the monkeys, the high and deep notes of the tree-frogs and toads, the monotonous chirp of the grasshoppers and locusts. When the rising sun has dispelled the mists which preceded it, all creatures rejoice in the return of day. The wasps leave their

long nests which hang down from the branches; the ants issue from their dwellings, curiously built of clay, with which they cover the trees, and commence their journey on the paths they have made for themselves, as is done also by the termits which cast up the earth high and far around.* The gayest butterflies, rivalling in splendour the colours of the rainbow, especially numerous hesperiæ, flutter from flower to flower, or seek their food on the rocks, or, collected in separate companies, on the cool streams.† The blue shining Menelaus, Nestor, Adonis, Laertes, the bluish-white Idea, and the large Eurolychus with its oscellated wings, hover like birds between the green bushes in the moist valleys. The Feronia, with rustling wings,

* "It is scarcely possible," says Mr Luccock, "to conceive of a greater plague than that which is produced by the ants. In the forests below, they form their nests beneath the surface of the ground, or pile cones of sand, eight or ten feet high, generally round the root or stem of a tree. But, on these heights, their nests stand by the road side, in the form of rough pillars made of earth and leaves, more than eight feet high and three in diameter. They resemble bee-hives in shape; and at first I thought them the production and abode of bees; for some of them have been opened with a *machado* (axe), for the purpose as I was told, of procuring honey. Examining them, I found the inside hollow and very black; the walls were from six inches to a foot thick, and full of innumerable passages communicating with each other, but with the external air only at the base, which is a little contracted, and thus sheltered from rain. The upper part frequently appears patched, as though an addition had been made to the cells, or a breach repaired. Whether the bees drive out the ants, or only take possession of a deserted hive, I know not; but I found they were of a small brown species, such as I had never noticed below. Within the hollow they deposite their round balls of wax and boney, and are deprived of it by travellers."—*Notes, &c.* pp. 404-5.

Henderson enumerates among the various species of the Brazilian bee, "the *cupimeira*, so denominated because it occupies the houses deserted by the *cupim* (ant)."

† A collection of 1600 different species of butterflies had already been made in Brazil some years ago.

menelaus, or the shining flies, as th
Meantime, the amorous thrush* (*turd*
concealed in the thicket, pours forth her
of beautiful melody; the chattering mar
from the close bushes, sometimes hei
there, in the full tones of the nightingale,
selves in misleading the hunters; and th
makes the distant forest resound while
bark from the trees. Above all these s
the metallic tones of the uraponga (o
sound from the tops of the highest tre
the strokes of the hammer on the anvil,

* Alluding, apparently, to this bird, the au
other place: "We first observed in these wooc
greyish-brown bird, probably a thrush, whic
bushes and grounds in damp, low woods, and
rous repetitions through the musical scale from
the German scale) so regularly, that not a sing
ing. It commonly sings each note four or five
then proceeds imperceptibly to the followir
It is usual to deny to the songsters of the A
all melody and expression, and to allow them
but splendour of plumage. But if, in general
tives of the torrid zone are more distinguish
ty of their colours, than by fulness and pow
seem inferior to our nightingale in clearness
ness of tone, yet, this little bird, among others
they are at least not destitute of the princip
(vol. i. p. 287.)

Mr Henderson in his list of Brazilian birds,
"a kind of thrush, and the greatest singer i
song does not differ from the blackbird." Pr
notices the same bird. "The red-bellied thr
sabiah, sat pouring forth its melancholy thou
on the tops of the bushes." (*Travels*, p. 53.
has a remarkable anecdote of this bird. The
fecting one, led him, he says, to doubt whet
birds is always an indication of pleasurable f
shot a "sabiar," whose note he describes
melodious. "Though badly wounded, it str
and continued it to almost its latest moments.
p. 307.

rer or more remote according to the position of
gster, fill the wanderer with astonishment.
thus every living creature by its actions and
reets the splendour of the day. The delicate
g-birds, rivalling in beauty and lustre the
emeralds, and sapphires, hover round the
st flowers.*

he *Colibri* or humming-bird, known in Peru under the
e of *Beija Flor* (kiss the flower), is the smallest of birds.
Their varieties have been stated at upwards of
great many more. Padre Cattanio mentions one
A European would never take it for a bird, but for
the end of one's finger. It is of the form and size of a
ill, feathers, wings, and tail, so that when on the wing
; and he would be tempted to consider it as a
eature of imagination. It is the most beautiful of the
y beheld it humming like a bee round the flowers,
nming a gentle chirping. Its tongue is almost the
size of the body. The upper part of the head, neck,
re of an indigo colour, and the lower part of the body
cond species differs from the first
having a spot both
ind and size are great
in the form of a
raw. The fourth variety
same colour and size
uth differs from the preceding
The seventh
. The eighth is the
peckled with white
igs and tail dark
iers have it long,
ception of the grey
, who have it a little
black, with
and of medium length
e throat and breast exhibit
ing to the movements of the
hen most bright, or
a sudden, sometimes by a
by blue, or by white,
acy. The head, which is

"When the sun goes down, most of the
tire to rest: only the slender deer, the shy
timid agouti, and the tapir, still graze ar
nasua and the opossum, and the cunning
the feline race, steal through the obscu
wood, watching for prey; till at last, the ho
keys, the sloth with a cry as of one in d
croaking frogs, and the chirping grassho
their monotonous note, conclude the day.
of the macuc, the capueira, and the goat-su
rimulgus), and the bass tones of the bull
nounce the approach of night. Millions o
beetles now begin to fly about like *ignes fat*
blood-sucking bats hover like phantoms in th
darkness of the night."*

Many of these inhabitants of the forests
more interesting to the naturalist than w
pleasing company to the traveller. In B
has much less to fear from wild beasts than
tiles, the species of which are almost im
and the greater part are venomous. This
with the plague of mosquitoes and other wi
mies, must be admitted to form some dr
the beauty and luxurious temperature of th

with a little crest of the same colour, when the bir
towards the observer: when it presents the fron
studded with sparkling rubies, or all of a brilliant s
insensibly changes to refulgent yellow. They ge
the tongue very long, the legs exceedingly short,
black. Their principle aliment is the juice or hone
which they extract, not as the bee, but in the sam
the butterfly. Some of them have the tongue cl
derson's History of Brazil. Appendix, pp. 5(

* Von Spix, vol. i. pp. 239—49.

† "The finest orange groves frequently fall a
brown ants, which gnaw off the bark, or to the m
which devour the roots. The young mandiocc
plantations are often invaded, stripped of their lea
waste by similar enemies in incredible numbers,

As the ground, however, becomes cleared, and the marshy lands are drained, many of these tribes of an-

of their roots by the wasps which live under ground. But even when the crop has happily reached maturity, the owner must share it with many foreign guests. Swarms of monkeys, flocks of parrots and other birds, attack the plantations; the paca, agouti, and other kinds of wild swine, eat up the leaves, stalks, and fruits; and myriads of tenthredoes injure the crop. The planter himself, particularly if he has just arrived from Europe, and is unaccustomed to this climate, has many hard trials to undergo from tormenting animals. If he does not keep his dwelling closed, particularly in the morning, evening, and night, there are swarms of large and small mosquitoes which torment him with their stings, even through the thickest clothes; and only gauze or silk can secure him against these enemies. The earth-flies (*Pulex penetrans*) which are concealed in numbers in the sand, penetrate under the nails of the hands and feet, and by producing a blister filled with little eggs, cause the most painful sensations, which, if the sympathetic swelling of the inguinal glands is neglected, are often followed by mortification. The blister, as soon as it gives pain, must be carefully removed, and snuff rubbed into the wound. Besides these, the inhabitant has often other enemies in his house. The white-bellied ant (*cupim, termes fatale*), a great number of blattæ, and other vermin, continually oblige him, by their destructive fury, to make new arrangements. The former cause the most terrible devastation wherever they pass in their course; for, metals excepted, they gnaw through every thing; and in a few days, the beams of the house are rotten; the linen, books, and all the household furniture are destroyed. The blatta commits great destruction among the vegetables in particular, and, in the night, even attacks the tips of the fingers. Without are numberless enemies. Not to mention the savage ounce, the poisonous serpents, lizards, scorpions, centipedes, and spiders, which, fortunately, are not frequently met with, and wound a person only when provoked; the mite (*acarus*), called *carabatos*, is one of the most formidable plagues. These little animals, from the size of a poppy-seed to that of a linseed, live in societies, and crowded by hundreds in the grass and on dry leaves. As soon as the traveller touches such a plant, they very quickly penetrate through his clothes to the skin, where they eat in, particularly in the more tender parts, and cause an intolerable

noyers will be gradually expelled or diminishe
primeval forests are continually giving way b
ax and the flames; and their various tenant
compelled to seek regions yet more remote
invasion of man. Although the beauty of t
try will unquestionably be diminished by thi
the neighbourhood will become far more agr
the resident.

The luxuriant power of vegetation in thes
produces many singular appearances. Whe
has a decayed hole or a crevice in it, ar
dium, dracontium, and other productions of
throw out large tufts of juicy, heart-shaped
shaped, dark-green leaves, so that the tra
holds the most extraordinary intermixture o
species of vegetation.* "With such a
life and such a vigorous striving at devel
says Dr V. Spix, "even so rich and fertile
incapable of furnishing the necessary nouri
sufficient abundance. Hence, the gigantic
in a constant struggle for their own preserv
impede each other's growth still more than t
our forests. Even stems which have grown
siderable height, requiring a large supply of
feel the influence of their more powerful n
are suddenly arrested in their growth by
prived of the requisite juices, and thus bec
short time subject to a rapid dissolution.
see the noblest trees, after suffering an a
some months' duration, eaten away by ants
insects, seized with decay from the root to
mit, till, to the terror of the solitary inhabita
forest, they fall down with a tremendous

itching, which is increased by the inevitable rubbi
the end produces an inflamed blister,"—*Von Spix*'
vol. i. pp. 258—60.

* Maximilian's Travels, p. 50.
Von Spix, vol. i. p. 243.

some places, where the forest has been burnt
wn to clear the ground for cultivation, the immense
orched trunks appear like the ruins of
ill in parts joined together by the wide-spread
eir parasite plants. So numerous are the creeping and
imbing plants so intimately do they
ipossible for the eye to penetrate
lany of them bear flowers of great
rly one kind of convolvulus with a
ower, the leaves of which are
nd the heliconia, a kind of
alyx and white flowers. The
ingular plant of this
ranches grow in
concavity of each
pearance, that it seems as if
ary had been employed
vex side is a
tops of the
taken for a
ing plants
taking root,
must cut
pendent
quently inflict
neral," says
luxuriant in
saw, presented a
difficult to
unknown." "Even
traveller, "are
gamous plants of a
arly the finest
ed ribbons in the
rees. A deep red horizontal
runks; while a fine carmine-colored
roperties of which, as a dyeing matter,

ments have been made in England,) covers the bark of the stronger trees with its round knobs." *

Mr Luccock describes the various tints of a Brazilian forest as extending from a light yellow green, to one bordering on blue, and these are mingled again with red, brown, and a gradation of deeper shades almost to black. The "silver tree" is of a brilliant white; the head of the mangoa is brown. The brazil-wood puts forth large flowers of a purple hue; and "I have seen," he says, "the vast mountain of Tengua clothed in yellow from the multitude of its liburnums." The effect of the flowering parasitical plants, he compares to "gay parterres in the air."

The same traveller witnessed, in 1816, on a comparatively diminutive scale, one of those magnificent conflagrations which not unfrequently take place in these forest tracks, occasioned sometimes by lightning, sometimes by the carelessness of travellers. "Fire had seized upon an adjoining forest, and devoured about half a league square of it. Being to windward, and not incommoded by the smoke, I approached as near as the heat would allow me, or the embers suffer a well-broken horse to advance. It is not in my power, however, to communicate more than a very faint idea of the sublime picture. I was in the midst of several hundred stems as large as the middle-sized British oak, all black and smoking, from whose smouldering remnants continually fell half-consumed branches, and smaller pieces of charred wood, which, broken and breaking others in their fall, formed a shower of sparks, rendered vivid by their passage through the air. The ground was covered with these charred arms, with embers, and with ashes, whence arose small spiracles of grey smoke, as if escaping through crevices from an immense furnace, hidden and burning beneath. At some little distance in front, the fire

* Travels, p. 43.

raged in all its fury. From the burning underwood, the flames rushed up in large sheets, which expired in the air, or seizing the dried leaves of those monarchs of the forest which had defied all former storms, instantly set the whole head in a blaze; and the crackling twigs formed a harsh counter to the surf-like roar of the flame below. While the fire spread itself, eating the forest all around, and became more active by every breeze, the remaining stumps in its immediate rear stood like piles of living coal, and seemed to writhe as under the influence of a liquid poison, creeping through their veins. The wintry appearance of those naked branches which preserved their station, and of the ground thickly strewed with ruins and black ashes, while flames surrounded me, and the heat of the atmosphere was almost intolerably oppressive, formed a contrast which cannot be described, an incongruous scene of desolation, which no art can represent." *

How this conflagration commenced, no one thought it worth while to inquire: it seemed to pass almost unnoticed as it had not endangered any farm or plantation. In the year 1796, a conflagration broke out on the summit of the Tengua, which lasted for nine months, and was mistaken by some persons for a volcanic eruption. It was at length quenched by the rains. The spot, Mr Luccock says, is still marked by the diminutive size of the trees, and the colour of he foliage. In proportion as any tract is cleared of wood, the birds of prey become less numerous, while the smaller kinds increase and multiply. In one instance, this traveller, noticed great numbers of small birds "like the linnet and canary," † where the land

* Luccock's Notes, &c. pp. 357, 8.

† The *Canario* has the form, and almost the same colour, but not the song, of the native of the Canary Islands: it is the first among the small birds that announces the dawn of day.

had been partially brought under cultivation. The marshy meadows abound with the white heron, the American lapwing, and plovers and other water-fowl in abundance.* The shining violet oriole and the razor-billed blackbird are the familiar inhabitants of the fields and hedges.

The luxuriance and richness of the vegetable world in South America is ascribed by Humboldt to the great moisture which every where prevails, and which gives it an advantage over all other hot countries, forming more especially a surprising contrast to those parts of Africa which lie within the same parallels of latitude. In many respects, the climate, the soil, the varied surface and the rich vegetation, seem to resemble more some parts of Asia Minor, but in that exuberance of evergreen foliage which forms the peculiar characteristic of the New Continent,—in the number of its finely wooded mountains, the sources of countless springs,—in the abundance of large streams, in the character even of its deserts without sand, and the impenetrable forests,—the tropical region of Brazil has the pre-eminence over every other part of the globe.

The *Cardial* (Cardinal) resembles the linnet, but is a little larger. It derives its name from a small crimson cap, or hood, which covers part of the neck: its song is loud and pleasant.

* Mr Luccock thus describes a species of heron, which he calls "the plumed Succoo." This shy but interesting bird is nearly as large as the common stork, white, with a yellow bill and legs: it is distinguished by a tuft of feathers, which grows from a membrane between the scapulars, and reaches the whole length of the back, resembling the bird of paradise. Mr Henderson enumerates the *cegonha* or stork, "similar to that of Europe;" the *garca* or heron; the *tuyuyu*, "the height of a man," which also lives on fish; the scarlet *guara*; and the rose-coloured *colhereira*, a delicate and beautiful bird, "the king of the mornasses."

After leaving the Mandioca estate, the caravan road to Minas Geraes ascends through the forest, by the edge of steep precipices and gloomy clefts, to the summit of the Serra de Estrella, about 4000 feet above the level of the sea, while the cones on each side rise nearly 2000 higher. There is an expensive paved road to the top of the mountain, nearly a mile in length, almost the only one of the kind in Brazil.* But at the end of this road there is no longer any possibility of using carriages on the rugged track. From the summit, there is a fine bird's-eye view of the bay, with its verdant islands, and the city in the background; and the coast can be traced from Cape Frio to Point Joatinga, a distance of nearly a hundred and fifty miles. On the opposite side, there is a more limited view of a very uneven woody tract, which extends along the coast to the Rio Paraiba. The mountain road first leads to Corrego Seco, a poor village, 2260 Paris feet above the sea level. It then descends through a high undulating country, partly broken by massy granite mountains, to Itamarete, a lone house with a *venda*, on the banks of the Payabuna or Piabuna.† This mountain rivulet is here about 50 feet

* Mr Luccock makes the whole ascent four miles and a half. The road is cut out of the side of the mountain, takes the line of a narrow, irregular defile, and is paved with large stones: the ascent in some places is very steep, but the angles are formed with judgement. "There is only one other work of the kind, I believe," says Mr L. "in Brazil, which communicates between Santos and St Paul's. Both of them do great credit to such an infant state."

† "This is one of those resting places which abound through the central part of Brazil, where there are frequented roads. The owner of a large estate builds what is called a *rancho*, which, in, general, is nothing more than a long, broad roof, covered with tiles, and raised upon rough unhewn posts, about twenty feet high, but it has generally no walls whatever. Beneath these sheds, those who travel with a troop take up their residence for the night, and have no communica-

broad. About a day's journey from Corrego Seco is Soumidouro, a small village in the midst of a forest, at the source of a mountain stream. From this place where Dr V. Spix passed a night, it is half a day's journey to the military post (*destacamento*) on the Paraiba, where all caravans coming from Minas Geraes, and the passports of all travellers going into the interior, are strictly examined. Mr Luccock descended from Itamarete in a N.N.W. direction, passing several large farming establishments to the miserable *rancho* of Olaria, situated in a fine valley or mountain defile. Eight miles further is the *rancho* of Pegado. At the distance of twenty-five miles from this place, the Piabuna, after having tumbled over a long succession of rapids, discharges itself into the Paraiba. The next stage is Pampulia, the most populous place in the road from Porto d'Estrella: it actually contained, in 1817, six or seven houses, all of them *vendas*. The road to it from Pegado ascends to an elevation of 1700 feet, crossing the summit of the Serro, and then descends into "a small vale, resembling one of the finest in Devonshire, dressed in Brazilian ornaments." The roads in this part are wider and well cut; the soil generally rich and deep. From Pampulia,

tion with the house or the owner of it. Just by, he establishes a *venda*, that he may be able to dispose of milk. For pasturage a small sum is paid to the owner of the land. At Itamarete, the *rancho* was 150 feet long by 30 broad."—*Luccock's Notes*, p. 375. Another of a somewhat better description, at Pegado, was 60 yards long by 15. It had a mud wall at the back and at one end; the front and the other end were railed with horizontal bars to the height of five feet, and there were two good gates. The pillars, both in the centre and the sides, were of brick; the rafters, spars, and rails, of different-sized trunks of the cocoa tree. The whole was put together, according to the custom of the country, without the use of a nail, or peg, or iron in any shape, the want of these being supplied by notches and tenons. The floor, as usual, was the earth, not even levelled.

Mr Luccock was informed it is a distance of twenty-five miles to Pao Grande, on the western road to the Paraiba, and about the same distance to Uva. To the eastward, it was stated, the country might be passed; but, beyond the district of Pampulia, the roads are bad, infested by Indians, and contain no established resting-place.

The route to Minas Geraes, which this traveller was pursuing, within four miles from Pampulia again ascends to a great height, and then winding from W. to N. and N.W., passes over gentle elevations of about 300 feet, the soil of the richest description, till, at Riberam, it enters on "a sort of Yorkshire-looking moor." Here reside a number of blacksmiths, who gain a living by making horse-shoes. The government very unwisely imposes a heavy duty on all unwrought iron that passes the Register further on. Shortly afterwards, the traveller passes the village of Pedro Moreiro, consisting of six or seven comfortless huts at the edge of the broad vale of the Paraiba; and then descends through a tract occupied by large sugar-plantations, to Governo, pleasantly situated at the junction of three small dells, each having its mountain torrent. He has not yet passed the limits of the parish of Inhumirim, nor is a church to be met with in the whole distance from Piedade. About three miles from the river, the country opens into a charming vale, which reminded Mr Luccock of the banks of the Tees near Barnard Castle. The stream is about two hundred yards broad. The ferry is reported to be fifteen miles from the mouth of the Piabuna, and about sixty from St Salvador des Campos: the country, as far as the falls of St Fidelis, is composed of steep mountains and narrow dells. The Register here, though one of the first importance to the province and the state, is a contemptible building, without a stable, garden, or enclosure of any kind; and though a military station, no soldiers were to be seen. There are,

besides, a *rancho* and a few mud huts. Upon a fine knoll on the other side of the river, stands a small chapel. A second Register must be passed on the banks of the Paraibuna, where, close to the water's edge, stands one good house, a small church, and a poor venda. The intermediate road is winding and difficult, and, though not above seventeen miles, forms a two day's journey. Within the distance of nine miles, the traveller has to ascend and descend six times, as much as 800 feet. The stream at the ferry is about 100 yards broad, and fifteen deep, with a sandy bottom.

The Paraiba is considered as one of the general boundary lines which divide the province of Rio from that of Minas Geraes; but Mr Luccock states, that the provinces have usually for their boundaries, the *agoas vertentes*, (literally, descending waters,) or a line running between the heads of the streams which flow down on either side of the hills into their respective reservoirs. Thus, the small district which is washed by the Pariabuna, and the Pariaba, and bounded by the Serro of Montequeira, belongs to the province of Rio Janeiro. Having now reached the limit of the province in this direction, we return to the coast.*

At the northern extremity of the Bay, between the mouth of the Iriri and that of the Mageassu, in a recess formed by the *Morro* (Rock) of Piedade, stands a little town, which forms the port of a thickly inhabited and well cultivated region; it is a place of great resort. The town of Magé, situated on the river to which it gives name, about four miles from the Bay, is one of the most considerable places in the neighbourhood of the capital. It was erected into

* A line drawn from S. to N., commencing at the fort of Lage, passing up the middle of the Bay and by the Inhumirim to the source of the Piabanha, and thence descending to the Paraiba, is considered as dividing the province into east and west.

a town in 1789. In 1816, it had several streets regularly arranged, many houses of a superior cast, a good fish-market, and an excellent church. The exports were large. The black or best sort of ipecacuanha is procured here. The river, though broad, is navigable only by means of the tide, being shallow at low water.

RIO TO CANTA GALLO.

After passing the mouth of the Iguapemirim, the next river is that which both Mr Mawe and Mr Henderson (the latter on the authority of Cazal) call the Macacu, but which Mr Luccock styles the Iguapezu, remarking that the Macacu, one of its confluents, often usurps its name, though much smaller and shorter in its course. "In point of size, extent, and quantity of water, this is," he says, "without question, the first of the streams falling into the bay of Rio; although the Inhumirim has more traffic upon it, and on that account is certainly the most important. The mouth of the Iguapezu is nearly 600 yards broad. Before it lies a bar, which, amidst its common difficulties, has several channels, through which vessels of 30 tons burthen may pass, when light, at half-tide: if coming down laden, it sometimes obliges them to wait three or four days for a sufficient depth of water; and the people have not only to endure the irksomeness of delay, but the torment arising from the various and unceasing hostilities of insects. About a mile within the bar is a small *venda*, which, with a probable reference to such sufferings, is called Patiencia. A little eastward is Villa Nova (de St Joze d'el Rey), once an abode of native Indians, and regulated by the laws made in their favour. The river continues broad and deep, where, about six miles from its mouth, and twenty-seven from the city, it is joined by the Kysar-

ebu from the eastward, commonly called the Casa ebu. Three miles higher we meet with the first sol ground, where is a fine plantation on the left of tl river. Here the stream is much less deep, and narrov ed to about a hundred yards. Soon after, we dr into shoal water, yet with a strong current. On t right is a round hillock, from the summit of which an extensive prospect. In the immediate vicinity is rich fenny tract, generally dry, but liable to be floo ed; to the north the mountains, though distant, are full view; to the east and south are unbounded plai broken by the abrupt and grey *serros* of Tokai, Ar rica, and Saquarema. The channels of the Guaxe diba, the Casarebu, and the Macacu, may also be d tinctly traced. The latter stream joins the Iguape (Guapiassu) from the north-east."*

The town of Macacu, the seat of the local go ernment, stands about two miles above the jun tion of the two streams in the midst of extensi marshes. It was thought by Mr Luccock to co tain, in 1816, a thousand inhabitants, with an un sual proportion of priests and lawyers. Its si and situation reminded him of Littleport in t Isle of Ely. Mr Mawe describes it as standi on a small eminence in the midst of a fine pla watered by a considerable stream, over which the

* Luccock's Notes, pp. 347, 8. Mr Henderson, speak of this river under the name of Macacu, describes it as en ing the bay by two mouths. "Alligators of a very large s inhabit its banks, and take shelter among the high reeds wh grow in the water. Its source is in the Organ mountains, n the rock called Canudos; and it is united on its right mar by the rivers *Guapiassu*, Cabucu, and Varge; on its left the Cacerebu and the Aldeia. The Guapiassu, which is most considerable, comes from the same mountains as the M cacu, and a little before its incorporation with that river, cc municates with it by a channel called Rio dos Morros (rive rocks). The principal confluent of this tributary river is P cinunga."—*Henderson's Hist.* p. 40.

are two good bridges. It has a church dedicated to S. Antonio, and a convent of "lazy Franciscans." It was created a town by King Peter II. in 1697. Since 1808, it has been the residence of a *juiz de fora*, whose jurisdiction also extends to the town of Mage. The population of Macacu, including its district, is stated by Mr Henderson to amount to 9000 souls. He makes the distance from the Bay three leagues in a direct line, and almost ten by the course of the river. It is three leagues west of Mage, and two leagues N.E. of Villa Nova. About three miles S.E. of Macacu, upon the right bank of the Aldeia, not far from its confluence with the Guapiassu (or Macacu), is the Portos das Caixas, a place of great resort from the interior, and the grand point whence all the productions of the district of Tapacora and the surrounding parishes are embarked in boats for the capital. More sugar is said to be sent from hence, than from all the other ports in the Bay.*

Pursuing the river Macacu, about seven miles higher, and at the computed distance of fifty from the capital (travelling by the rivers), is Pirasenunga, where the traveller again enters on "the Piedmont" of the province. Mr Luccock pursued the river of the same name four or five miles, till it diminished to a very narrow stream. Crossing to the west, he fell in with the Iguapemirim, running to S.E. to meet the Guapiassu. The whole of the way to Mage, distant about twelve miles, lies through a rich and well-cultivated plain.

Mr Mawe, on leaving the town of Macacu, proceeded up the winding banks of the river to a farm

* Mr Mawe, in his journey to Canta Gallo, entered what he calls the Macacu, proceeding up it to "a house called Villa Nova;" at day-break he reached Porto das Caixas, and thence was navigated in a canoe to Macacu.

belonging to a nunnery at Rio, distant only a day's journey from Portos das Caixas. The next day, crossing the stream, where it was at least sixty yards broad and three feet deep, he proceeded in an easterly direction to the *fazenda* of a Captain Ferreira. This estate, bounded by the alpine ridge behind it, is the extreme point to which the Macacu is navigable. It is between six and seven leagues from the town of that name. About two miles from the fazenda, crossing the river twice, is the first Register in this direction, guarded by a corporal and private soldier. A second Register is the next resting-place, which Mr Mawe reached after a difficult and dangerous journey. The badness of the road may be judged of from the fact, that he was nearly four hours in going six miles. "The imagination of Salvator Rosa himself," he says, "never pictured so rude a solitude. On one side rose the great barrier of mountains which we had yet to cross, covered to their summits with trees and underwood, without the smallest trace of cultivation; on the other lay the broken country between this ridge and the plain, presenting the same wild features of sylvan scenery. The miserable hut at which we lodged, partook of the savage character of the neighbourhood." Here the travellers were fortunate in being supplied with coffee and eggs. "As to milk, there was no possibility of procuring any: a cow would have been considered here as an incumbrance; nor would any one of the six idle soldiers have given himself the trouble of milking her, though they had all been dying of hunger." The next day's journey was still more rugged and perilous, the road in some places traversing almost perpendicular passes, and forests which scarcely admitted the light of day. "Not a bird did we see," says Mr Mawe, "nor the trace of any living thing, except some wild hogs." The elevation of the serro which he

crossed, he supposed to be between 4 and 5000 feet above the level of the sea; the air was sharp and keen, and the thermometer (April) stood at 58°. The road continued in a N.E. direction to the *fazenda do Morro Queimado;* beyond which it began to descend the other side of the mountain ridge, through an uneven tract, formed of hills and ravines, which extended to Canta Gallo, the capital of the district, distant from Morro Queimado thirty-four miles.

"Canta Gallo," says Mr Mawe, "though so near the seat of government, was not known until about twenty years ago.* It is situated in the midst of a fine well-wooded country, abounding in springs, and intersected by narrow valleys and ravines. The bottoms of some of these ravines formerly contained gold, which was accidentally discovered by some *grimpeiros*† from Minas Geraes, in the course of their searches about the great river Paraïba, and the Rio Pomba. The richness of these beds of gold, and the fertility of the circumjacent country, attracted numbers of adventurers, who placed themselves under the direction of an able chieftain, named Mâo de Luva, on account of his having lost one hand, and his wearing a stuffed glove in its place. The band soon amounted to two or three hundred persons, who washed every part in the neighbourhood worth washing, before they were discovered. Being very determined men, they lived free of control, and bade defiance to the laws. It was not until about three years after their first settlement,

* Mr Henderson states, that the first colony for working these mines was established in 1785.

† "A name given to those persons who go about the country seeking gold-washings, and do not give notice, or solicit a grant when they discover any. They are considered and treated as smugglers."

that the existing government was apprised of th
when, alarmed at the report of their numbers, w
was doubtless exaggerated, they sent out spie
discover their rendezvous. This, after much
and great difficulty, was effected; the spies, in
dering through the solitary woods and fastness
the neighbourhood, were attracted toward the
by the crowing of a cock; hence the name of C
Gallo, which was subsequently given to it.
introduced themselves as smugglers, who wish
belong to the fraternity, and after living there
time, found means to give information to govern
at Rio de Janeiro, who issued proclamations,
ing pardon if the whole body would surrender.
measure was ineffectual; the *grimpeiros* were
provided with fire-arms, and determined to d
themselves as long as any gold could be found.
a year or two afterwards the washings bega
fail, and thus the great bond of interest which u
them being loosened, some deserted the place,
the rest became less vigilant in taking mea
for their defence. The government seized thi
vourable opportunity for reducing them; a con
rable force was assembled in the vicinity,
orders to make an attack at a certain fixed
which was known to be celebrated by the *gri*
iros as a festival in honour of some saint. A
expected time, while they were engaged at a
banqueting, and too much occupied with their
to think of their arms, which had been laid a
(the flints having been secretly taken out,) abo
hundred soldiers rushed in among them. Those
were sober enough flew to their arms, exclair
We are sold! we are betrayed! treason! tre
The contest was short; the soldiers seized the
leaders, who were either sent to Africa or impris
for life: of the rest some were taken prisoners, o

fled, but were pursued for years afterwards, and a few fell in the attack."*

The gold, however, had for the most part disappeared; and, at the period of Mr Mawe's visit, scarcely sufficient was procured to pay the officers and soldiers appointed to receive it. The settlers had wisely turned their attention to agriculture, a far less precarious mode of subsistence.

The district of Canta Gallo is a territory of great fertility. It is watered by many streams which descend from the Organ mountains, its southern limit, and discharge themselves into the Paraïba, which separates it from Minas Geraes on the north. On the east, a continuation of the Organ range separates it from Goytacazes, and on the west, the Piabanha separates it from the district of Paraïba Nova. Among its rivers are the Pequequera, well stored with fish, and navigable for twelve miles; the Rio Negro, navigable for an equal distance, and also abounding with fish; the Bengalas; and one called Rio Grande. In 1814, the parish of Santissimo Sacramento was created a town, with the name of St Pedro de Canta Gallo. Its government consists of two ordinary judges and three magistrates, with subordinate officers. The town is traversed by a current of good water, which falls into the Macacu. It is stated by Mr Mawe to be about forty leagues distant from the capital.

The occasion of Mr Mawe's visit to this place, was a report, brought to Rio, that a silver mine had been discovered in this district. The men who laid claim to the discovery, brought to the mint a quantity of earthy matter in powder, from which was smelted a small ingot of that metal. The report being laid before the Conde de Linhares, who was

* Mawe's Travels in the Interior of Brazil, 8vo. 1812, pp. 170-2.

then prime minister, Mr Mawe was solicited to i
vestigate the business on the spot. During his s
at Canta Gallo, he made frequent excursions i
the neighbourhood, in the course of which he
tained some information respecting the half-civil
aborigines of the district. They reside in the wo
in a most miserable condition. Their dwellings
formed of boughs of trees, bent so as to hold a thi
or tiling of palm leaves; their beds are made
dry grass. Having little idea of planting or till
they depend for subsistence almost entirely on t
bows and arrows, and on the roots and wild fi
which they find in the woods. A few among t
can speak a little of the Portuguese language.
dress of the men consists of a waistcoat and a
of drawers; that of the women, of a chemise
petticoat, with a handkerchief tied round the h
after the fashion of the Portuguese females. T
bear the general characteristics of their race,
copper-coloured skin, short and round visage, b
nose, lank, black hair, and regular stature, incli
to the short and broad set. "Being desiro
says Mr Mawe, "to see a proof of their skill
precision in shooting, of which I had heard m
I placed an orange at thirty yards' distance, w
was pierced by an arrow from every one who
his bow at it. I next pointed out a banana-
about eight inches in circumference, at a dist
of forty yards: not a single arrow missed its
though they all shot at an elevated range.
rested by these proofs of their archery, I went
some of them into a wood, to see them sho
birds. Though there were very few, they d
vered them far more quickly than I could;
cautiously creeping along until they were within
shot, never failed to bring down their game.
stillness and expedition with which they peneti
the thickets, and passed through the brush-w

were truly surprising; nor could any thing have afforded me a more satisfactory idea of their peculiar way of life. Their bows are made of the tough fibrous wood of the *iriri*, six or seven feet long, and very stout; their arrows are full six feet long, and near an inch in diameter, pointed with a piece of cane cut to a feather edge, or with a bone, but of late more frequently with iron. They are loathsome in their persons, and, in their habits, but one remove from the Anthropophagi. A woman was gnawing at a half-roasted parrot, which was spiked on a stick, with the feathers scarcely burnt off and the entrails hanging out. They are not of a shy and morose character, but have a great aversion to labour, and cannot be brought to submit to any regular employment. Rarely is an Indian to be found serving as a domestic, or working for hire, and to this circumstance may be ascribed the low state of agriculture in the district; for as the farmers, when they begin the world, have seldom funds sufficient to purchase negroes at Rio, their operations are for a long time very confined, and frequently languish for want of hands."*

About fifteen miles north-east of Canta Gallo, crossing the Rio Negro, is a place called Santa Rita, where a considerable quantity of gold has been obtained by washing the soil. The operations are carried on in a deep ravine, bounded at one extremity by an abrupt hill, the other end opening on an extensive plain. The soil appeared to Mr Mawe extremely rich, being clothed with luxuriant verdure, and the hills on each side were covered with trees. The stratum of *cascalhão* (gravel with rounded pebbles) in which the gold is found, lies under a bed of soil four or five feet deep, and varies from two feet to seven or eight inches in thickness. The soil being removed, the *cascalhão* is

* Mawe's Travels, pp. 174—6.

dug out, and is conveyed with great care to the near est place where there is water, to be there washed by the negroes. Near Santa Rita, Mr Mawe discov ered a considerable quantity of lime-stone, of which the mountains in this neighbourhood appear to consist He presented some of it to the proprietor of the gold works, who was astonished to hear of such a produc tion as *stone* lime, the lime that was used in this par of the country being made of sea-shells; nor could h be convinced of the fact, till Mr Mawe proved it b burning what he had produced.

On his return to Canta Gallo, Mr Mawe was con ducted by a guide to the pretended silver mine. I was a laborious journey, and, for the last six miles they were obliged to dismount, the mountains ove which the road lay being impassable by mules.* The had to ford rivulets, and force their way through thick ets; and at length, he had the mortification to find th the story was a fabrication, and that no such mir existed. The silver that had been exhibited at Ri is supposed to have been an old buckle or spoon, file down and mixed with some pulverized earthly sub stance. Impositions of this kind, it is stated, are no uncommon.

The Indian corn grown in this district, is ground by a horizontal water-wheel, on the upper end of which is fixed the mill-stone; and so great is the velocity given to it by the rush of water brought to bear on it, that i makes from fifty to sixty revolutions in a minute They have likewise a mode of pounding the corn into flour, by a machine called a *sloth*. "Near a current of water, a large wooden mortar is placed, th pestle of which is mortised into the end of a leve twenty-five or thirty feet long, resting upon a fulcrum at five-eighths of its length: the extremity of the shorte

* The second day he crossed the Rio Grande of this distric where it formed a stream "as large as the Derwent at Derby."

mm of this beam is scooped out, so as to receive a sufficient weight of water to raise the other end, to which appends the pestle, and to discharge itself when t has sunk to a given point. The alternate emptying nd filling of this cavity cause the elevation and fall of he pestle, which take place about four times per inute. This contrivance," adds Mr Mawe, "surasses all others in simplicity; and in a place where he waste of water is of no consequence, it completey answers its purpose."

On his return to Rio, Mr Mawe solicited permision to visit the diamond mines of Serro do Frio,—favour which had never hitherto been granted to any oreigner; but, through the friendship of the Conde le Linhares, his application was successful. While preparing for this expedition, (an account of which will be given in our survey of the province of Minas Geraes,) an occurrence took place which procured for him as a mineralogist considerable celebrity, and was the occasion of his being introduced within the walls of the treasury. The circumstances were these. A free negro of Villa do Principe, about nine hundred miles distant, addressed a letter to the prince regent (now King John VI.), announcing that he possessed an amazingly large diamond, which he had received from a deceased friend some years before, and which he begged he might have the honour to present to his royal highness in person. As the magnitude which this poor fellow ascribed to his diamond, was such as to raise imagination to its highest pitch, an order was immediately despatched to the commander of Villa do Principe, to send him forthwith to Rio. He was accommodated with a conveyance, and escorted by two soldiers. As he passed along the road, all who had heard the report congratulated him on his brilliant good fortune; the soldiers also anticipated promotion; and all persons envied the fortunate negro. At length, after a journey of twenty-eight days, he

hear the prince's opinion. A round diamond, a pound in weight filled them all with wonder. ready calculators reckoned the millions it was others found it difficult to numerate the sum at it would be valued; but the general opinion highness's servants was, that the treasury was millions of crowns the richer. The occurrer came the general topic of remark. When the was shewn to the ministers, an apprehension, an a doubt was expressed, that a substance so lar round might not prove to be a real diamond; however, sent it to the treasury under a strong and it was lodged in the jewel room.

On the next day, the Conde de Linhares s Mr Mawe, and requesting him to give his opini pecting this famous jewel, stating that he h doubts about its proving a genuine diamond. hour appointed, being furnished with the nec joint order from all the ministers, he repaired treasury, and was shewn through several s apartments hung with scarlet and gold, to an room, in which were several strong chests with locks each, the keys of which were kept b different officers, who were all required to be at the opening. One of these chests being un

arrived at the capital, and was conducted to the palace. On being admitted into the presence-chamber, he threw himself at the prince's feet, and delivered his wonderful gem. His highness was astonished at its magnitude; a pause ensued; the attendants waited to hear the prince's opinion. A round diamond, nearly a pound in weight filled them all with wonder. Some ready calculators reckoned the millions it was worth; others found it difficult to numerate the sum at which it would be valued; but the general opinion of his highness's servants was, that the treasury was many millions of crowns the richer. The occurrence became the general topic of remark. When the stone was shewn to the ministers, an apprehension, and even a doubt was expressed, that a substance so large and round might not prove to be a real diamond; they, however, sent it to the treasury under a strong guard, and it was lodged in the jewel room.

On the next day, the Conde de Linhares sent for Mr Mawe, and requesting him to give his opinion respecting this famous jewel, stating that he had his doubts about its proving a genuine diamond. At the hour appointed, being furnished with the necessary joint order from all the ministers, he repaired to the treasury, and was shewn through several splendid apartments hung with scarlet and gold, to an inner room, in which were several strong chests with three locks each, the keys of which were kept by three different officers, who were all required to be present at the opening. One of these chests being unlocked, an elegant little cabinet was taken out, from which the treasurer took the gem, and in great form presented it to Mr Mawe. Before he touched it, he was convinced that it was only a rounded piece of crystal. It was above two inches in diameter. To convince the parties present that it was not a diamond, Mr M. produced a real one, with which he cut a deep nick in the stone. This was proof positive; a certificate was

accordingly made out, stating that it was an inferior substance of little value, which was signed by Mr Mawe. Other boxes were now unlocked, from one of which were taken two large slabs of diamond, each a full inch in length, and about the eighth of an inch in thickness, but of a very bad brown colour. When found, they formed one entire piece, which, being amorphus, was not known to be a diamond, until the chief of the working party had had recourse to the common experiment of placing it on a hard stone, and striking it with a hammer. If the substance resist the blow, or separate in *laminæ*, it must be a diamond. The latter was the case in the present instance, and the man having thus made two diamonds from one, at the expense of the value of the whole, transmitted them to the intendant.*

The remaining diamonds in the treasury appeared to be in quantity about four or five thousand carats. Few of them, however, were large, except one of an octahedral form, which weighed full seventeen carats. Among the few coloured diamonds, one of the smallest was of a beautiful pink, one of a fine blue, and several of a green tinge; the yellow were the most common, and the least esteemed.

The poor negro chagrined and disgraced, had to find his way home as he could.

A flat coast extends from the mouth of the Guapiassu, to the broad, shallow mouth of the Guaxendiba. This river, which rises in the hills of Taypu, is stated by Mrs Graham to have a course of only five miles in

* The river Abaité, whence these were obtained, has produced one of an octahedral form, which weighs seven eights of an ounce troy, and is supposed to be one of the largest diamonds in the world. It was found about twelve years before Mr Mawe's visit, by three men who were under sentence of banishment. On presenting this valuable gem to the then viceroy, they *were pardoned* and rewarded.

a straight line, but its windings measure above it is navigable, and its banks are astonishingl About four miles up, on its left bank, is the v St Gonzales; and on the opposite side, a r ducts by the edge of marshy ground to St Tapacora, a small Indian village, and the near to the capital (Mr Luccock states) where th language is in use, though in a corrupted Near the mouth of this river stand the chu fazenda of Nossa Senhora da Luz, described Graham in very glowing language. It is abou miles from Rio. From the varanda of the pro house, there is a picturesque view of the ba with rocky islands, one of which, called It said to be held in reverence by the Indian abode of their supposed divine benefactor Zo taught them the use of the mandioc.† "But,"

* The appellation of Tapacora, is given, accord Henderson, to the parish of St João d'Itaborahy, nea bank of the river Varge. This is probably the sam Luccock refers to.

† Paye Tzome, or Tome, to whom this legend represented as an elderly man, who wore white clot bore only a staff: he came from the country of the *Ge* that is, the people of the East; and when the Jesuits from the people the first accounts of him, they wer to enumerate the moons which had elapsed since he but said, it was before the days of their grandfath one person was then living (1550), about 130 years is said to have resided a considerable time at Cabo F its neighbourhood, till, having received some insult, towards the north, and was heard of no more. Wh came, he taught the people to clothe themselves, t houses, and to cultivate mandioc. The Jesuits taugh believe that this personage was no other than St Th Apostle, whom tradition reports to have preached the Persia, India, and China. The *Tamoyo* Indians of vince have been supposed to derive their name from th factor; *Tzomeos* being softened by the French into T It is more probable, that they were named from th they inhabited, which formed the old *capitania* of S

traveller, "though nature is at least as fine here as in India or in Italy, the want of some reference to man as an intellectual and moral being, robs it of half its charms." The proprietor of this estate represented the creole negroes and mulattoes as far superior in industry to the Portuguese and Brazilians: they are the best artificers and artists; all decorative painting, carving, and inlaying, are done by them; in short, they excel in all the mechanical arts, and at least one third of the orchestra of the opera-house is composed of mulattoes. A mulatto slave on this estate became attached, in his youth, to a creole negress, born, like him, on the estate; but he did not marry her till he had earned money enough to purchase her, in order that their children, if they had any, might be born free. Since that time, he had become rich enough to purchase himself, but his master was unwilling to sell him his freedom, afraid of losing his services. "Unfortunately, these persons have no children; therefore, on their death, their property, now considerable, will revert to the master. Had they children, as the woman is free, they might inherit the mother's property; and there is nothing to prevent the father's making over all he earns to her."*

RIO TO CAMPOS AND ST FIDELIS.

Immediately behind the village of Praya Grande, towards the east, rises the mountainous district of St João do Carai, comprising about twelve miles every way. It is traversed by three roads, of which the most southerly passes over lofty rocks and through thick woods, commanding views which compensate for the difficulties of the route. Another road passes to the north of Praya Grande, and then turns to the right, to the *fazenda* of Barraca, where are a good

* Journal of a Voyage to Brazil. By Maria Graham, p. 198.

house and chapel, and fine plantations. From hence, it rises to high, undulating ground, and, after passing some minor establishments, proceeds down a steep, winding, romantic road, to the great *fazenda* of Tokai, situated in a fine plain not much above the sea-level, and watered by a stream that falls into the Atlantic a little east of the Marica islands, "better known by the easily-understood name of *Contrabandistas*." Here, the mountains are separated from each other by a wide expanse of swampy land, and look as if they had once been rocky islands. The intervals are filled with sea-sand, and water lodges in them.* Nearer the sea are broad meadows, and within them a range of shallow lakes, which afford subsistence to great numbers of water-fowls. About nine miles from Tokai, and upwards of twenty from Rio, is a spot said to have been formerly the entrance to a harbour, where the waters of the large lake of Marica (or America), when swollen by rain, open themselves a vent. On the cessation of the rains, the waters of the lake sink to their usual level, and the tide again shuts up the aperture, so that, in a short time, a dry and secure road is formed across the bar, though it never rises to the height of the natural ridge with which it is connected at each end. Beyond this spot succeed the plains lying between the lake of Marica and the elevated *restinga*, or bank, which bars the sea, from the mountains of Carai to the lofty point of Ponta Negra.

A third route from Praya Grande conducts along the beach, and then stretches inward, through a well-cultivated track, to the village of St Gonzales. This route was taken, in 1815, by Prince Maximilian of Wied Neuwied, in exploring the eastern coast. St Gonzales is well situated on rising ground, close to the northern verge of the mountains of Carai. It

* Mr Luccock styles this "the Cambridgeshire of Rio."

:ained, in 1815, a church and about two hundred ses, "the greater part of them belonging," Mr :cock states, "to people from the Azores, or their :endants, who, though generally residing on their as, resort hither on religious festivals. They are arkably civilized and orderly, so as to render this of the pleasantest abodes in the country." After ving St Gonzales, the country gently declines to rich plains of the Guaxendiba,* which, draining mountains of Carai, pours its pellucid stream ough a narrow, rocky channel. Near the river is solitary *venda*. A well-cleared, fertile, and popu- s region then presents itself, succeeded by virgin ods and swampy plains, extending to the banks of Itapitiu, near the mouth of which is situated the e town of Santa Maria de Marica; so named from lake on which it borders. This is the seat of a l jurisdiction, being created a town in May 1814. e church, dedicated to our Lady of Amparo, is the t in the province, with the exception of some in metropolis. It contained, in 1817, a few unpaved ets of low but neatly whitened houses: the popu- on of the parish is stated at about 800. It is twen- ive miles E. of Rio, and nearly thirty W. of Cape o.

Prince Maximilian describes the road to Marica as sing over the serra de Inua, "an arm projecting the sea from the lofty mountainous chain which s parallel with the coast." Thick, gigantic forests er the acclivity, full of monkeys, parrots, and other zilian game. In particular, a small red-and-gold- oured monkey (*simia rosalia*) was seen here, ed the red *sahui*, or *marikina*, which is not found her north. "Good Brazilian hunters," remarks highness, "possess a wonderful talent for exploring se forests: their bodies being inured to fatigue, and

* Written by Prince Maximilian, *Guajintibo*.

the custom of always going barefoot, give them a great superiority in this employment. Their dress consists of a light shirt and cotton drawers. They often have a cloth jacket hanging over their shoulders, which they put on when it rains, or in the cool nights. The head is covered with a felt or straw hat. A leather belt, passing over the shoulder, holds the powder-horn and shot-bag, while the lock of the long fowling-piece is generally secured by the skin of some animal."*

About four miles from Marica,† the traveller arrives at the lake of that name, which is stated to be nearly eight miles long, in some places not above two in breadth, and about six leagues in circumference. The bottom, Mr Luccock says, is a hard sand, with patches of mud; the banks are low and marshy, or sandy; and it abounds with fish, while its shores are peopled by gulls, cormorants, lapwings, plovers, and other water-fowl. The fishery is a government monopoly.

Ponta Negra, a bold, bluff point towards the sea, is the abutment of a primitive *serro*, having on each side a sandy plain. On the northern slope of a hill which terminates the low tongue of land beyond this point, is the parish of Our Lady of Nazareth, of Sequerema, consisting of a church, about fifty houses, and as

* See plate.

† Mr Luccock writes it *America*, but derives it, at the same time, from the Tupi word *Marica*, which signifies "any hollow thing:" thus, it is most frequently applied to the dried shell of the gourd, or the fruit of the passion-flower which has not been broken, and in which the seeds rattle; and he supposes that the natives would naturally transfer it to a decked vessel. It is also given by the Indians to their idols. "Is it certain," he asks, "that Vespucius brought hither with him the name of *Americus*, and that he did not adopt it as an honourable and appropriate distinction, as Scipio received the addition of Africanus?"—He supposes that the Tupi word was first adopted as the appellation of the new country.

many scattered huts, inhabited chiefly by fishermen. The salt lake of Sequerema is stated by Mr Henderson to be six miles long from east to west, by three in breadth at the widest part. Prince Maximilian makes it about six *leagues* in length by one in breadth. Like that of Marica, it has a bottom of hard sand, and is not above three feet deep in most places. During the rainy season, it inundates the country, and opens for itself a rough, shallow channel to the sea. The river Tinguy, which runs into its most northern bay, is the principal one that flows into it. Beyond this is the still larger salt lake of Araruama (or Iruama), stated to be twenty miles long by eight in breadth, but with still less propriety termed a lake, as it communicates with the sea, a league and a half to the N. of Cape Frio, by a channel fifty yards in width at the mouth. In some places, it is several fathoms in depth; in others, quite shallow. It receives the Francisco Leite, the Mataruna, or Rio do Ponte, and several smaller streams; and, like the other lakes along this line of coast, abounds with fish. Its name is stated to be derived from the notorious offensiveness of its waters, arising from an accumulation of mud and putrid shell-fish.* On its northern shore is the Indian village of St Pedro, founded by the Jesuits, consisting of a large church and a collection of mud huts seated on a small eminence.† The inhabitants are almost exclu-

* Between the lakes Marica and Sequerema, Mr Henderson places the Jacuné, stated to be nearly three miles in length; between the Sequerema and the Araruama, that of Jacarépua, about two miles in length; and, near the western extremity of the Araruama, the lake Vermelha, also about two miles long, and, though not communicating with the sea, saline. Besides these, he mentions the lake Boicaca, which is, in fact, the mouth of a river of that name, and that of Juthurnuahibi.

† From Sequerema, Prince Maximilian proceeded, the first day, to Pitanga, "formerly a convent, as appears from the old church," now an extensive fazenda. The next night, they lodged at the fazenda of Tiririca, where are extensive sugar-

sively Indians, there being only a few Portuguese besides the priest. They have a titular *capitam mor* of their own nation. They are described as having still more strongly marked the genuine physiognomy of their race, as observed in the Indians of St Lorenzo. "Their dress and language are those of the lower classes of Portuguese, and they are but partially acquainted with their ancient tongue. They have the vanity to pretend to be Portuguese, and look down with contempt on their still uncivilized brethren in the woods, whom they call *caboclos*, or *tapuyas*. Their women fasten their long, coal-black hair in a knot at the top of the head, like the Portuguese females. In the corners of their huts hangs the net, or hammock, in which the family sleep." They retain the Indian character—indisposition to labour, cunning, inflexible pride, and a strong prepossession in favour of their woods. They attend mass, but shew little regard in other respects for their priest.—The great forests of St Pedro are full of the finest timber, and the Brazil wood abounds here.

About two leagues distant, crossing the lake, is the town or "city" of Cabo Frio,* situated on the south-

works. Three leagues further is Parati, another fazenda, which has also been a convent, and has "a considerable new church." The fourth day, they reached the *venda* of St Pedro. Most of the principal fazendas have a church, or a large apartment fitted up as a chapel, where mass is read on Sundays and holidays. "Travellers," says P. Maximilian, "would do well not to neglect to attend mass, because the inhabitants think much more highly of them for so doing. They treated us with kindness and attention when we observed this rule, and shewed evident coldness when we did not go to church."

* This town, or rather village, is stated to have assumed, like many other places, the title of city, when, in 1615, it came into the possession of the Portuguese, on the expulsion of the Dutch pirates who had established themselves here for the purpose of exporting dye-wood.—*Henderson's Brazil, p. 102.*

on bank of the strait which unites the waters of the lake Araruama with the ocean, on the northern side of the well-known promontory from which it takes its name. This was one of the first settlements made on this part of the coast. The town is divided into two parts by an interval of half a mile. The principal portion has a church dedicated to Our Lady of Assumption, a hermitage of St Bento (Benedict), and a Franciscan monastery. The chapel of Our Lady of Cuia crowns the summit of a rock. The smaller portion of the city, called Passagem, defended by fort St Matthæus, has another Benedictine hermitage. Here is a *juiz de fora*, whose jurisdiction extends to the town of Maccahé. This "city" is stated also by Mr Henderson to have "royal masters" (regius professors, we presume) of Latin. Fish is the common diet, and, with farinha and sugar, the chief article of exportation. A sort of marsh fever is said to be prevalent here, the whole neighbourhood being intersected with lakes and marshes. "Though small and badly paved," says Prince Maximilian, "the town contains several houses of a very neat and pretty appearance."

Beyond Cape Frio, the line of coast assumes a more northerly direction to the little town of Barra de S. João, situated on a sandy tongue of land between the river of that name and the sea. The route passes the spacious fazenda of Campos Novos, which has a church built by the Jesuits; and from this place to the river João, a distance of four leagues, extends almost uninterruptedly a magnificent, primeval forest. The river, where crossed by Prince Maximilian in a canoe, is from three to four hundred yards broad, "in some measure navigable," and five or six brigs were found anchored here.* "An Englishman who

* Mr Luccock, either crossing nearer its mouth, or, perhaps, when it was swelled by a high tide, (for it was at the

is settled here, by trade a smith, told us," says his highness, "that English vessels had already found their way to this solitary spot, and that he should therefore solicit the appointment of vice-consul. We gave him a number of fowling pieces to repair, and the consul in expectancy performed his business to our entire satisfaction." Two leagues further, a clear rivulet, called Rio das Ostras, falls into the ocean. About seven leagues to the north-east of the river St João, the Maccahé, discharges itself in front of the islands of St Anna, dividing the district of Cape Frio from Goytacazes.* The little town of S. João de Maccahé lies scattered among thickets on the banks of this river. It contained, in 1816, about a hundred and fifty houses, for the most part small and of a single story, built of clay, with upright wooden posts,

time covered with foam,) found it a mile and a half broad. This river, according to Mr Henderson's authorities, rises in the skirts of the serro of Canudos, with the name of *Aguas Claras* (clear water), affords navigation for upwards of ten leagues, running among woods and mountains, and after bathing the southern skirts of the mountain of its name, disembogues about seven leagues S.W. of the Maccahé. Large quantities of timber are exported by it. Mr Luccock afterwards ascended it, in a canoe, nearly twenty-eight miles, at which spot it is about 400 yards wide, with low, muddy banks, and not more than 15 miles in a direct line, he imagined, from the place of embarkation. It is sufficiently deep, through its whole course, for vessels of seventy tons burden, and when the bar shall be cleared and the country improved, will become a commercial medium of great consequence. At the point to which Mr Luccock ascended it, it receives the Rio Dourado, up which he advanced four miles through a thickly wooded country, and it might easily be made navigable, he thinks, for seven miles from its confluence with the St João.

* The Maccahé rises in the Organ range, and has a course of fifteen leagues, ten of which are navigable. About three leagues from its embouchure, it is joined by the St Pedro from the Serra Frade.

and neatly whitewashed. On a rising ground, where stand the church of Santa Anna and the flag-staff, there are a few houses of superior pretensions. It was created a town in 1814. The inhabitants are chiefly fishermen, but export a great deal of timber and some produce from the plantations. Up the river, in the interior, the Gorulhos (or Guarulhos) Indians, are said to have several villages. The mouth of the harbour is now not more than 70 yards broad, and unfit for the entrance of vessels of more than 200 tons burden.*

The traveller has now entered on the extensive plains of the Goytacazes, which extend to the Paraiba, an uninteresting and depopulated tract of country, abounding with extensive marshes and *lagaos* (lakes) overgrown with reeds, in which oxen and horses, often in great numbers, are seen wading up to their bellies. "This extensive and level wilderness is inhabited by herds of oxen who range at liberty to the distance of even twenty or twenty-five miles from all human habitations. Once or twice a-year, they are driven together by their owners, the proprietors of the neighbouring fazendas, into a *coral*, or place surrounded by palisades, where they are counted and marked. If any person approaches these animals, they raise their heads, snuff the air, and gallop away

* Between the St João and the Maccahé, in Mr Luccock's map, is the bay of St Ann, which he describes as deep and spacious, but subject in rough weather to a violent surf. To the southward is a shingly shore, which, when it meets the high rocks beyond the river Una, becomes bold, and stretching to the eastward, forms the point of Buzios, called in the English charts Cowrie's Point. "Near the mouth of the Una lies the small secure bay of Armazem, affording a refuge to vessels baffled in their attempts to double the Cape, and when the wind blows hard from the east. The entrance is between two small rocky islands, called, from their different appearance, the beautiful and the ugly."

with tail erect. "It is certainly remarkable," s Prince Maximilian, "how, by the extraordinary tivity and care of the Europeans, this useful spe of animal is already spread over the greatest par the globe. In the north, the ox feeds in the fr forests of birch; in the temperate zone, in our p sant grassy vales, between shady woods of be between the tropics, under palms and bananas; in the islands of the South Sea, beneath *melales metrosideros*, and *casuarinas*. This animal, i pensable to civilized man, every where thrives, increases his wealth and prosperity."*

The largest of the lakes which stretch along part of the coast, is the *Lagoa Fe a*, the Ugly L so called from its appearance: it consists of two connected by a canal, the northern part nearly miles long from east to west by upwards of twelv width, the southern, sixteen miles in length by two in width. It is so shallow, that canoes can ceed only by certain channels, and so subject t agitated by the wind, that it is frequently dange for them. It abounds in fish, and the waters sweet and wholesome. In rainy seasons, it ann ly opens for itself an outlet at a place called *B do Furado*, when it presents the appearance of a ous river: when the waters are low, the *barra* is The whole district might, Mr Henderson thinks drained by hydraulic machinery, as the Lincoln fens have been, when the grounds would afford e lent pasturage, and become susceptible of cultiv at all times. "The fine campos or plains of this trict," he says, "would certainly become the ely of Brazil, if its territory, rich in soil, were div into certain portions, and delivered to a people ani ed with a spirit of agricultural improvement. unhappily, the greater part of these lands are in

* Maximilian's Travels, p. 91.

ls of three proprietors,—the Benedictine monas-
of Rio de Janeiro, the purchaser of the ex-
iitical possessions, and a "titular," the Bishop of
. Mr Luccock, who is somewhat fond of such
graphical comparisons, styles the tract between
ce Feia and the Para'ba, the *Delta* of the river,
ch, he says, in several points resembles the Nile,
that lake does Lake Mareotis. The climate, ac-
ding to the information he received, is hot and un-
lthy, but there can be no doubt that it might be
dered much more salubrious. It contained in
)1, according to Cazal, 280 sugar-mills, chiefly on
higher grounds; and since that period, they have
idly increased. Mr Luccock remarks, that, with
iigh-sounding extent of estates, the inhabitants
rifice the whole to a passion for sugar and rum.*
Prince Maximilian and his companions passed a
ht at the Abbey of St Bento, which stands in the
st of these verdant plains. "The edifice is large,
a handsome church, two courts, and a small gar-
. In one of the courts were lofty cocoa-palms,
led with fruit. The convent possesses fifty slaves,
) have built their huts near it in a large square.
ere are besides, a sugar refinery (*engenho*), and
eral farm-buildings. This rich convent possesses
) great numbers of horses and oxen, and several
als and *fazendas* in the adjacent country: it even
eives tithes of sugar from several estates in the
ghbourhood." Beyond this spot, the country be-
es more populous; habitations and fazendas pre-
t themselves in close succession, and vendas are
nd all along the road to the town of St Salvador.
St Salvador dos Campos, commonly called Campos,
a tolerably well-built, populous, and flourishing

* The Campos sugars, as they are termed, are esteemed best in Brazil.

town, with regular streets, for the most part paved, and neat houses, some of several stories. Balconies, closed with wooden lattices, in the old Portuguese fashion, were common at the time of Prince Maximilian's visit. Not far from the river Paraïba, on which the town stands, is a square where are the court-house and prison. Justice is administered by a *juiz de fora*. There are seven churches,* five apothecaries' shops, and a hospital; and "it is said," adds his highness of Wied Neuwied, "that there are in this part of the country medical men of much greater skill than in the other districts of the coast, where practitioners worthy of confidence may often be sought in vain." The number of inhabitants, he states at between 4 and 5000, and the population of the whole district of Goytacazes at 24,000 souls. A recent census, however, according to Mr Henderson, makes the population of the town amount to 1150 families, which would give a higher estimate. The town is very agreeably situated, extending along the south bank of "the beautiful Paraïba," about eighteen miles from its mouth, or thirty (Mr Luccock says) by water, and four miles below the mouth of the little river Muriahé, which falls into it. Among the inhabitants there are many opulent persons, proprietors of the sugar refineries near the river. Coffee and cotton here thrive extremely well, and even European vegetables are met with in the markets. An active trade is carried on, chiefly, however, in sugar and brandy. In the town, a considerable de-

* Most of these churches belong to conventual establishments. Mr Henderson enumerates, "besides the mother church, a house of misericordia, three hermitages dedicated to Our Lady of Rosaria, (of) Boa Morta, and (of) Lapa, two Terceira orders of St Francisco and St Carmo, and an hospital." Here, too, as at Cabo Frio, are "royal professors of the primitive letters and Latin."

gree of luxury prevails, and, if Prince Maximilian may be credited, of cleanliness and neatness. About two miles from the mouth of the river, in front of a small island, is the village of St Joam da Barra, containing about 1500 inhabitants, chiefly fishermen and mariners: it forms the port to Campos, whence all the produce is shipped in coasting-vessels for the capital.

The district of Goytacazes extends about fifteen miles further north, having for its boundary, according to the Brazilian geographer followed by Mr Henderson, the river Camapuan, Cabapuan, or Capabuanna, which has its source in the serra of Pico, not far from that of the Muriahé, and running between the mountains, enters the Atlantic fifteen miles north of the Paraïba. Its right name, Prince Maximilian states to be Itabapuana.* The great fazenda of Muribecca, which stands in the middle of the verdant plains stretching between the two rivers, formerly belonged, together with a tract nine leagues in length, to the Jesuits: it is now the property of four individuals. The whole district of Goytacazes, comprising 28 leagues of coast, originally formed the *capitania* of St Thomé, so denominated from the contiguous cape. The first donatory was Pedro de Goes, who established himself on the banks of the Paraïba, where he lived in amity with the Indians two years; but, after that period, a war broke out between the colonies and the natives, which lasted five years, and terminated in the abandonment of the colony. The country then remained in the possession of the three nations of Puries, Guarues, and Goytacazes, till about 1580, they were driven by the governor of Rio beyond the mountains. About a hundred years after, the terri-

* To the above variations of orthography may be added, Comapuam and Campapoana. Mr Henderson, following the Corografia Brasilica, says, "the Indians call it Reritigba;" but P. Maximilian states, that this is an error, Reritigba being the name *applied to the Beneventé*.

for those who should return some special pri
One of the most important was, a right to choo
own village magistrates, who were to act join
those appointed by the viceroy. "A conser
court was established, to watch over the inte
the people; and their lands were apportioned t
who wished to occupy them, but never sold: tl
rent was about two-pence for every six feet i
The rent was appropriated to the use of the l
and properly administered, I believe," says M
cock, "so long as the order of Jesuits
Forms then established, though gradually fall
disuse, are not yet quite obsolete. All estat
sold, which once made a part of this distri
be furnished with what is called an Indian tit
sale must be ratified by the conservatorial cou
the lands remain charged with a sort of qu
One set of these titles which I have seen,
far back as the year 1623. There are still
villages, which are acknowledged to retain th
lege of electing a native magistrate as a sort o
jutor to their foreign governor, and one or two

The savage and warlike tribe who inhabited the district which still bears their name, are described by the Jesuit Anchieta as the most inhuman on the whole coast. They were of gigantic stature, possessed great strength, were skilled in the management of the bow, and were enemies to all other nations. Contrary to the custom of the other Indian tribes, they suffered their hair to grow long and hang down, and were distinguished by a lighter colour, more robust make, and greater ferocity. They were divided into three hostile tribes, the *Goaytaca Assu*, *Goaytaca Jacorito*, and *Goaytaca Mopi*. They are said to have also borne the name of *Cat cus*, and are reckoned by Vasconcellos among the *Tapuyas*, because they spoke a language differing from the dialects of the general language (*lingoa geral*). The Coroado Indians are believed to be the remains of this once powerful tribe.* A mission or village of this tribe exists at St Fidelis, on the banks of the Paraiba thirty miles above St Salvador, and two below the last fall of the river. It was founded between thirty and forty years ago, by four *padres*, Italian capuchins, two of whom where still living at the time of Prince Maximilian's visit: one had the management of the establishment at St Fidelis; the other resided at the Aldea do Pedra, seven or eight leagues higher up the river. At St Fidelis, there are also some of the *Coropo* tribe, the whole of which is said to be now civilized; "that is to say, settled," for they still retain, as well as the

* So it is stated in the *Corografia Brasilica*; "but this," remarks Prince Maximilian, "is improbable, as the Goaytacases suffered their hair to grow long, and the Corondoes in former times derived their name from the custom of cutting it all off, except a small crown." Their affinity to the Coropoes and the Puries, is attested by the similarity of their respective dialects, their weapons, and their habits. "Our young Coropo," says his highness, "spoke all three languages." Their head-quarters are in Minas Geraes.

Coroadoes, many of their savage habits and c
The inhabitants of this mission are thus desc
his highness of Wied Neuwied.

"We found these people still very origi
dark-brown complexions, perfectly national ph
my, very strongly marked features and coal-bl
Their houses are good and roomy, constru
wood and clay, the roofs covered with palm-le
reeds, like those of the Portuguese. Their s
nets are hung up in them, and the bow an
stand in the corner, leaning against the wal
rest of their simple furniture is composed
dishes, or bowls, (*cuias*), made by thems
gourds and the calabash-tree, hand-baskets
laced palm-leaves, and a few other articles.
clothing consists of a white cotton shirt and b
but on Sundays they are better dressed,
then not distinguishable from the lower
Portuguese; but even then the men frequ
with their heads and feet bare. The women
contrary, are more elegant, sometimes wear
and are fond of finery. They all speak Por
but among one another they generally con
their national language.

"As the day after our arrival at St Fi
Sunday, we attended mass in the morning
church of the monastery, where the inhabitan
neighbouring country had assembled, purely
curiosity, to see the strange visiters. Fath
delivered a long sermon, of which I did no
stand a word. We afterwards walked thro
uninhabited monastery, and inspected its cu
The church is large, light, and spacious,
painted by Father Victorio, who died only a

* The Coroadoes of Aldeia do Pedro, only a mo
the visit of P. Maximilian, had, in one of their ex
shot a Puri, and made great rejoicings on that occasi
veral days.

months before. This missionary had very zealously promoted the welfare of the Indians, and his memory was much respected by them, whereas they seemed not to be so much attached to the present priest: the Indians had indeed once driven away the latter, alleging, that he could give them no instruction, because he was no more than themselves. The painting in the interior of the church cannot indeed be called beautiful, but it is tolerable, and a great ornament in this remote and unfrequented spot, which agreeably surprises the traveller. The names of the four missionaries are inscribed behind the altar. On the sides hung a number of votive tablets, among which is a painting representing a slave whose arm became entangled in the works of a sugar-mill, which, when the negro in his anguish invoked a saint, immediately stood still. Such accidents befall the negroes but too often, because those people are very careless and imprudent. The convent is not large, but it has a tolerable number of light, cheerful apartments, and a low tower. The trouble of ascending its half-dilapidated stairs was rewarded by the agreeable prospect of the beautiful and romantic valley."*

From St Fidelis, there is a road over the mountains to Canta Gallo, and another to Minas Geraes. The river here is of considerable breadth, and up to the *cachoeira* (cataract) above St Fidelis, is said to contain seventy-two islands. In the rainy season it overflows its banks to a great extent. Opposite to St Fidelis, on the other side of the river, is a settlement of the Puries, who, wandering about the great deserts between the sea and the north bank of the Paraiba,†

* P. Maximilian's Travels, pp. 109—12.

† The Para ba, pronounced, and sometimes written Parahyba, runs between the Serra dos Orgaos and the Serra da Mantiqueira, having its rise about five leagues to the north-west of Paraty in the district of Ilha Grande, where it has at first the name of Paritinga. Flowing south-west, it collects the wa-

extend themselves as far west as the Rio Pomba in Minas Geraes. In this quarter they had behaved peaceably, although, at Aldeia do Pedro, they were at war with the Coroados. "When kindly treated, they fix themselves near the plantations, but then they consume the produce of them, as if they were cultivated for their benefit; they even frequently rob the negroes of their shirts and breeches, when they are employed in the woods near the plantations." It was one of the chief objects of Prince Maximilian's journey to these parts, to obtain information respecting the original inhabitants. Crossing the river, therefore, he repaired to a fazenda, the proprietor of which obligingly despatched his brother into the wood, to inform the Puries, that some strangers were arrived, who wished to hold a talk with them, and to invite them to a great sacrifice on the occasion. Five men and three or four women, with their children, first accepted the invitation: they are thus described.

"They were all short, not above five feet five inches high;* most of them, the women as well as the men,

ter of a very mountainous district: it then turns in a contrary direction running north-east for about 200 miles, without receiving any fresh contribution till it is joined by the Paraty from the serra of Ilha Grande. Their united waters, rolling on a hundred miles further, absorb those of the Parahibuna and the Piabuna, two streams coming from the north-west and the south-west. About fifty miles more to the eastward, it is joined by the Pomba from the north-west. A little lower it receives the Bengalas, soon after which it descends the precipitous fall of St Fidelis. Its whole descent is about 6000 feet; its bed, through the whole course, is rocky, occasionally deep, and forms an almost continued succession of rapids. The banks are generally bold and abrupt; hence it is subject to floods, which sometimes roll along with frightful impetuosity. It abounds with a great variety of fish.—See Luccock, p. 274; Henderson, p. 35.

* Among all the tribes on the east coast, seen by this traveller, he considered the Puries to be the smallest in stature.

)road and strong-limbed. They were all quite
, except a few who wore handkerchiefs round
vaists, or short breeches, which they had ob-
from the Portuguese. Some had their heads
y shorn; others had their naturally thick, coal-
hair, cut over the eyes, and hanging down into
ck; some of them had their beards and eye-
cut short. In general they have but little beard;
st of them, it forms only a thin circle round the
, and hangs down about three inches below the
Some had painted on their foreheads and
s, round red spots with *urucu*: on the breast
rms, on the contrary, they all had dark blue
, made of the juice of the *genipaba* fruit.
are the two colours which are employed by all
apuyas. Round the neck, or across the breast
ıe shoulder, they had rows of hard, black ber-
rung together, in the middle of which, in front,
number of the eye-teeth of monkeys, ounces,
ınd wild animals. Some of them wore these
ces without teeth. They have another similar
ent, which appears to be composed of the rind
tain vegetable excrescences, probably the thorns
ıe shrub. The men carry in their hands long
ınd arrows, which, as well as all their effects,
t our desire bartered for trifles. Two of them
en brought up in their childhood among the
guese, and spoke their language a little. We
hem knives, rosaries, small looking-glasses, and
ıted among them some bottles of sugar-brandy,*
ich they became extremely cheerful and fami-

he Brazilian tribes are," he states, "inferior in this
to the Europeans, and even to the negroes."
iis ill-judged practice, almost universally adopted by
an travellers, of making presents to the natives of strong
cannot be too strongly deprecated: it is ultimately as
ic as it is injurious to the Indians.

liar. We informed them of our intention to visit them in their woods early in the morning, if they would receive us well; and, on our promising also to bring some presents with us, they took their leave highly pleased, and with loud shouts and singing hastened back to their wilds."

The next morning, accordingly, the poor savages, eager for the brandy, were seen early coming out of the woods. They were "treated" immediately with the "strong water," and his highness then accompanied them to the forest, where the whole horde had turned out, and were lying on the grass. Men, women, and children were huddled together, and contemplated the visiters with curious but timid looks. "They had all adorned themselves," we are told, "as much as possible. A few of the women wore a cloth round the waist or over the breast; but most of them were without any covering. Some of the men had, by way of ornament, a piece of the skin of a monkey, of the kind called *mono* (*ateles*), fastened round their brows; and we observed also a few who had cut off their hair quite close. The women carried their little children partly in bandages fastened over the right shoulder; others carried them on their backs, supported by broad bandages passing over the forehead. This is the manner in which they usually carry their baskets of provisions when they travel. Some of the men and girls were much painted; they had a red spot on the forehead and cheeks, and some of them red stripes on the face; others had black stripes lengthwise, and transverse strokes with dots over the body; and many of the little children were marked all over, like a leopard, with little black dots. This painting seems to be arbitrary, and to be regulated by their individual taste. Some of the girls wore a certain kind of ribbons round their heads; and the females in general fasten a bandage of bass or cord tightly round the wrists and ancles, in order, as they

say, to make those parts small and elegant. The figure of the men is in general robust, squat, and often very muscular; the head large and round; the face broad, with mostly high cheek-bones; the eyes black, small, and sometimes oblique; the nose short and broad, and their teeth very white: but some were distinguished by sharp features, small aquiline noses, and very lively eyes, which in very few of them have a pleasing look, but, in most, a grave, gloomy, and cunning expression, shaded by their projecting foreheads. One of the men was distinguished from all the rest by his Calmuck physiognomy; he had a large round head, the hair of which was all cut to an inch in length, a very muscular, robust body, a short, thick neck, and a broad, flat face; his eyes, which were placed obliquely, were rather larger than those of the Calmucks usually are, very black, staring, and wild; the eyebrows were black, bushy, and much arched; the nose small, but with wide nostrils; the lips rather thick. This fellow, who, as our attendants said, had never been seen here before, appeared to us all so formidable, that we unanimously declared we should not like to meet him alone unarmed in a solitary place.

"All the men here carried their weapons, consisting of long bows and arrows, in their hands. The bow of the Puries and Coroadoes measures six feet and a half, or even more: it is smooth, made of the hard, tough, dark-brown wood of the *airi* palm, and has a string composed of fibres of *grawatha* (*bromelia*.) The arrows of the Puries are often above six feet long, made of a firm knotty reed (*taquara*), which grows in the dry woods, feathered at the lower extremity with beautiful blue or red feathers, or with those of the peacock-pheasant or of the jacutinga. Those of the Coroadoes are made of another reed, which has no joints. None of the tribes which I visited on this coast, poison their arrows: the ingenu-

ity of these people, who are in the lowest stage of civilization, has, happily, not attained this art.

"When our first curiosity was satisfied, we requested the savages to conduct us to their huts. The whole troop preceded, and we followed on horseback. The way led into a valley which crossed the sugar-plantations; it then decreased to a narrow path, till at length, in the thickest of the forest, we came to some huts, called *cuari* in the language of the Puries. They are certainly some of the most simple in the world. The sleeping-net, which is made of *embira* (bass from a kind of *cecropia*), is suspended between two trunks of trees, to which, higher up, a pole is fastened transversely by means of a rope of bindweed (*cipo*), against which large palm-leaves are laid obliquely on the windward side, and these are lined below with *heliconia* or *pattioba* leaves, and, when near the plantations, with those of the banana. Near a small fire on the ground lie some vessels of the fruit of the *crescentia cujete*, or a few gourd-shells, a little wax, various trifles of dress or ornament, reeds for arrows and arrow-heads, some feathers and provisions, such as bananas and other fruit. The bows and arrows stand against a tree, and lean dogs rush loudly barking upon the stranger who approaches this solitude. The huts are small, and so exposed on every side, that when the weather is unfavourable, the brown inmates are seen seeking protection against it by crowding close round the fire, and cowering in the ashes: at other times, the man lies stretched at his ease in his hammock, while the woman attends the fire, and broils meat, which is stuck on a pointed stick. Fire, which the Puries call *potí*, is a prime necessary of life with all the Brazilian tribes: they never suffer it to go out, and keep it up the whole night, because they would otherwise, owing to the want of clothing, suffer severely from the cold; and because it is also attended

with the important advantage of scaring all wild beasts from their huts.

"As soon as we reached the huts, our exchange of commodities was set on foot. We made the women presents of rosaries, of which they are particularly fond, though they pulled off the cross, and laughed at this sacred emblem of the catholic church. They have also a strong predilection for red woollen caps, knives, and red handkerchiefs, and most readily parted with their bows and arrows in exchange for these articles. The women were very eager after looking-glasses, but they set no value upon scissors. We obtained from them by barter a great number of bows and arrows, and several large baskets. The latter are of green palm-leaves interwoven together: below, where they lie against the back, they have a bottom of platted work, and a high border of the same on the sides, but are generally open at top. All the savages frequently offer for sale large balls of wax, which they collect when gathering wild honey. They use this dark-brown wax in preparing their bows and arrows, and also for candles, which they sell to the Portuguese. The Tapuyas make these candles, which burn extremely well, by wrapping a wick of cotton round a thin stick of wax, and then rolling the whole firmly together. They set a high value on their knife, which they fasten to a string round the neck, and let it hang down upon the back: it frequently consists only of a piece of iron, which they are constantly whetting on stones, and thus keep it very sharp. If you give them a knife, they generally break off the handle, and make another according to their own taste, by putting the blade between two pieces of wood, which they bind fast together with a string."*

* Maximilian's Travels, pp. 115—120.

Rude insensibility, except under the stimulus of physical appetite or the passion of revenge, is represented as the most distinguishing trait of these savages. One of the horde sold his son to their visitors for a shirt, two knives, a handkerchief, some beads, and some small mirrors; and the boy neither changed countenance at hearing his fate, nor took leave of his friends. They have in general several wives. No idols were seen among them; but they recognise in the thunder the voice of a supreme being, whom they call *Tupan*. Prince Maximilian says, that the Puries would never confess that they eat human flesh; but, that they feast on the bodies of their slaughtered enemies, is attested by various witnesses. It certainly is a disgrace to the Brazilian government, that some effectual plan is not adopted to civilize these degraded members of the human race, and to render these fertile and extensive territories subservient to the wants of civilized man. The Puries are the principal tribe now remaining in these uncleared regions, and either their civilization or their extermination cannot be an event very distant.

It only remains to notice in this province, the chief places in the mountainous, but fertile district of Ilha Grande, which occupies its south-western extremity. Parati, situated near the river of the same name, on the western side of the bay of Ilha Grande, was created a town in 1660. It has, as usual, a *juiz de fora*, and royal professors; the parish church is dedicated to Our Lady of Remedies, and it has two other chapels. Its commerce is considerable. Its rum, in particular, is in great request. It is about 60 miles W. of Rio.

Angra dos Reys, the most ancient town in the province, but now fallen into decay, is about twenty-five miles N.E. of Parati: it stands among the frontier mountains of Ilha Grande, which name it fre-

quently takes, and is defended by two redoubts. It has a parish church dedicated to Our Lady of Conception, two chapels, a convent of Franciscans, whose domains are said to be constantly on the increase, and one of slippered Carmelites. It has the same *juiz de fora* as Parati, and professors of the same kind. Its commerce is pretty considerable, and vessels of the largest size can anchor in its port. The vine and the fig-tree thrive in its vicinity.* The uncommon fertility of the soil of the adjacent country, has induced many families to move into this district; and since 1811, a new town has been formed upon the eastern bank of the Mambucaba, near its embouchure. A few leagues to the north, near the margin of the same river, is the picturesque mountain of Taypicu, having the form of a sugar-loaf; and not far from its source, is the celebrated pinnacle commonly called the Friar's Hood, from its supposed resemblance to the cowl of a Franciscan. It is near the southern point of the great Serro of *Bocaina* or *Bucaina*, which is stated by Mr Luccock to have given name to the Buccaneers.† "The interior of this country," says the same traveller, "is as mountainous and broken as

* "The elevation of the place," says Mr Luccock, "4000 feet above the sea, is favourable to both."

† The name of the *Serro* was itself derived, Mr L. states, from a practice of the inhabitants, who roasted their meat on wooden trivets or stages, whence the oily part dropped into and fed the fire beneath. Mr Southey derives the word *Buccaneers* immediately from this practice, without noticing the name of the mountain. Describing the cannibal feasts of the Tupinambas, he says: "Four forked stakes were driven into the ground, sticks were laid across, and on this they rather dried than broiled the flesh. This wooden frame was called the *Boucan;* food thus smoked and dried was said to be buccaneered; and hence the origin of the name applied to that extraordinary race of freebooters who were so long the scourge of the Spaniards in South America."—*Hist. of Brazil*, vol. i. p. 207.

any in Brazil; yet much of the land is rich, an
crops of coffee are abundant. It is thinly inha
by a hardy and industrious race, who want only
to convey their produce to the coast or to a ma
a want not likely to be soon supplied. Many ci
ed Indians reside in this district. Passing thr
one of their villages, we found the people sitting u
alcoves placed in front of their huts, dressed in al
finery which the cheapness of British goods had i
duced among them."

Proceeding southward, we now enter on the
vince of

SANTO PAULO.

This province, formed by the union of a part o
old capitania of St Amaro with half of that o
Vincente, took its present name in the year 1
when John V., having incorporated them with
crown lands by purchase, appointed the city o
Paulo as the residence of the captain-general.
divided from the province of Rio on the north-
by a line which, traversing the heights of the
Serro from the point of Joatinga to the head of
Jacuy, descends that river till it joins the Para
The serra of Mantiqueira separates it from M
Geraes on the north; the Rio Grande and the
ranna from Goyaz and Matto Grosso on the west
north-west; the Sahy from St Catherina on the s
and on the east, it has for its boundary the Atla
Its territory is almost all within the temperate z
between 20° 30′ and 28° S. lat, comprising 450
from north to south, and 340 miles of medium wi
It is divided by the last arrangement, which
from February 1812, into three *comarcas* or *ou
rias;* St Paulo, Hitu, and Curytiba, each being

* Luccock, p. 272. † Henderson.

gnated by its principal town. Except in the eastern art, where a cordillera, or elevated ridge of mountains, runs parallel with the coast, this province is not ountainous. None of the maritime provinces, with ie exception of Para, contain so many navigable vers; but all these, excluding only the few streams r mountain torrents which descend the eastern declivity of the cordillera, flow into the interior, and are vallowed up by the Paranna; so that they afford no cilities to commerce.

The city of St Paulo, which gives its name to ie province, is the oldest in Brazil,* and beyond very other interesting in an historical point of view. Here, more than in any other place," says Dr Von Spix, "we find the present connected with ne past. The Paulista is sensible of this, and says, ot without pride, that his native city has a history of its own." The celebrated Anchieta and is brother Jesuits commenced this city in the year 552, with the foundation of a college, in which hey celebrated the first mass on St Paul's day. When, six years after, it acquired the denomination f a town, its name was determined by this circumtance. Its first inhabitants were a horde of Guayna Indians under their cacique, Tebireça, who had esided in the *aldeia* of Piratinin, near the small iver of that name, not far from the new colony, vhich, in consequence, took the name of St Paulo le Paratininga.† The Indians were soon joined by ı great number of Europeans, and a mixed race apidly augmented the population; so that before a :entury had elapsed, the Paulistas had become formidable by their numbers, as they were distinguished ›y their spirit of enterprise.

* St Salvador (Bahia) only claims a rival antiquity, being ounded by Thome de Sousa in 1550.

† See page 21.

"The accounts of earlier historians," says Dr Von Spix, "describe the Paulistas as a lawless tribe, resisting every legitimate constraint of custom and moral feeling, who, for that very reason, had renounced the dominion of Portugal, and formed a separate republic. This opinion was caused also by the reports of the Jesuits, who certainly had good grounds at that time to be discontented with the conduct of the Paulistas. Subsequently to the year 1629, the latter frequently made incursions into the Indian colonies of the Jesuits in Paraguay, and with incredible cruelty carried off all the natives as slaves. These plundering excursions, as well as their enterprises in search of gold to Minas, Goyaz, and Cuiaba, gave to the character of the Paulistas of that time a selfish rudeness and insensibility, and inspired them with a disregard for all relations consecrated by law and humanity, which naturally drew upon them the severest reprobation of the fathers, who were animated with enthusiastic zeal for the welfare of mankind.*

"This rude character is, however, now softened, and the Paulista enjoys, throughout Brazil, the reputation of great frankness, undaunted courage, and

* The Paulistas, although they did not designate the domestic Indians by the appellation of captives, or slaves, but by that of *administrados*, disposed of them as such, giving them to their creditors in payment of debts, and by way of dowry on occasions of marriage. The Jesuits, who possessed or had the control over a great number of Indians, and under whose power they received the denomination of *administrados*, without any consequences of slavery being attached to the term, declaimed against the abuses practised by the Paulistas, and demonstrated to them the impropriety of usurping a right to dispose of the liberty of the Indian. The Paulistas, who were opulent, and owed all their wealth to the arms of their numerous *administrados*, determined to repel the Jesuits, in order that which they promulgated should not militate against their interests."—*Henderson's History of Brazil*, p. 17

a romantic love of adventures and dangers. It is true," continues Dr Von Spix, "that in conjunction with these commendable qualities, a propensity to anger and revenge, pride and stubbornness, have remained in his character, and he is therefore feared by his neighbours; the stranger, however, sees in his haughty manner, only earnestness and an independent spirit; in his good-natured frankness and hospitality, an amiable feature; in his industry, the activity that marks the inhabitants of a temperate zone; and has less occasion than his neighbours to become acquainted with his faults. The only excuse for his pride is, that he can boast of having a claim, through the actions of his forefathers, to this new continent, which the settlers from Europe cannot adduce. There is no manner of doubt that the first comers contracted frequent marriages with the neighbouring Indians, and the complexion and physiognomy of the people indicate the mixture here, more than in the other cities of Brazil, for instance, in Maranham and Bahia. Many whites have, however, at all times settled here; and many families of Paulistas have preserved themselves without mixture with the Indians: these are as white, nay, even whiter, than the purer descendants of the Europeans in the northern provinces of Brazil. The mamelucoes of various degrees have coffee-coloured, bright yellow, or nearly white complexions; but the broad, round face with high cheek-bones, the small black eyes, and a certain unsteadiness of look, betray, more or less, the Indian origin. In general, the principal characteristics of the Paulistas are, a lofty, and at the same time, broad make, strongly marked features, expressive of a bold, independent spirit, hazel eyes (they are very rarely blue), full of fire and ardour, thick, black, smooth hair, muscular make, firmness and vivacity in their motions. They are justly considered as the strongest, most healthy,

and most active inhabitants of Brazil. The strength with which they tame horses, and catch the wild cattle by means of the noose, is as surprising as the ease with which they endure continued labour and fatigue, hunger and thirst, cold and heat, wet, and privations of all kinds. In their expeditions on the inland rivers to Cujaba and Matto-Grosso, they display now, as formerly, the greatest boldness and perseverance in dangers and hardships of every description; and an unconquerable love of travelling still impels them to leave their country. We accordingly find, all over Brazil, more single colonists from St Paulo, than from any other province. This roaming kind of life they have probably inherited from their ancestors. On the whole, the Paulistas may be said to have a melancholy disposition inclining to be choleric. They characterize thereby, in some degree, in a moral view, the zone which they inhabit; for the nearer we approach the equator, the more decidedly do we find the choleric, irritable character expressed.

"The women of St Paulo have the same simplicity as the men. The tone of society is jovial and unaffected, animated by ready and cheerful pleasantry. They have been unjustly accused of giddiness. If the spirit of conversation is strongly contrasted with the refined manners of their European relatives, among whom a jealous etiquette prohibits the unrestrained expression of feeling, their artless liveliness does not excite surprise, in a province where a free and simple mode of thinking has been retained more than in any other part of Brazil. The women of St Paulo are of tall and slender, though not delicate make, graceful in their motions, and have in the features of their well-formed countenances an agreeable mixture of cheerfulness and frankness. Their complexion, too, is not so pale as that

of most Brazilian women, and they are on that account reckoned to be the handsomest women of Brazil."*

Mr Mawe, who visited St Paulo in 1807, gives a similar representation of the state of society in this capital. "The appellation of Paulista," he says, "is considered by all the females here as a great honour, the Paulistas being celebrated throughout all Brazil for their attractions and their dignity of character. At table they are extremely abstemious. Their favourite amusement is dancing, in which they display much vivacity and grace. At balls and other public festivals, they generally appear in elegant white dresses, with a profusion of gold chains about their necks, their hair tastefully disposed and fastened with combs.† Their conversation, at all times sprightly, seems to derive additional life from music. Indeed, the whole range of their education appears to be confined to superficial accomplishments: they trouble themselves very little with domestic concerns, confiding whatever relates to the inferior departments of the household to the negro or negress cook, and leaving all other matters to the management of servants. Owing to this indifference, they are total strangers to the advantages of that order, neatness, and propriety, which reign in an English family. Their time at home is mostly occupied in sewing, embroidery, and lace-making. Another circumstance repugnant to delicacy, is, that they have no mantua-makers of

* Von Spix's Travels, vol. ii. pp. 5—8.

† Abroad, or as a general sort of undress at home, many wear a "long coat of coarse woollen, edged with gold lace, velvet, fustian, or plush, according to the rank of the wearer." With this is worn, out of doors, a round hat. But few ladies appear in the streets without the long black veil or cloak, made either of silk or kerseymere, and trimmed with broad lace.

their own sex; all articles of female dress hei made by tailors. An almost universal debility vails among them, which is partly attributal their abstemious living, but chiefly to want of cise, and to the frequent warm-bathings in they indulge. They are extremely attentive to means of improving the delicacy of their pe perhaps to the injury of their health.

"The men in general, especially those of the er rank, officers, and others, dress superbly: ir pany, they are very polite and attentive, and every disposition to oblige; they are great t and prone to conviviality. The lower ranks, pared with those of other colonial towns, ar very advanced state of civilization. It were wished that some reform were instituted in thei tem of education. The children of slave brought up, during their early days, with th their masters; they are playmates and compa and thus a familiar equality is established be them, which has to be forcibly abolished wher arrive at that age at which the one must .cor and live at his ease, while the other must and obey. It has been said, that, by th taching the slave to his master in early they ensure his future fidelity; but the seems fraught with many disadvantages, and at least to be so modified as to render the y bondage less galling by the recollection of liberty." *

The taste for European luxuries, however by no means, at the time of Dr Von Spix' in 1817, made so much progress among the bitants of St Paulo, as with the more opulen zens of Bahia, Pernambuco, and Maranh "Convenience and cleanliness," this traveller

* Mawe's Travels in Brazil, p, 114—116.

"are more attended to, than elegance and splendour in their household arrangements. Instead of the light North American furniture and French looking-glasses which are seen in the other provinces, we found in the sales only a row of leaden chairs, venerable for their antiquity, and a small glass, which, from its Nuremberg frame, the German recognizes as a countryman. Instead of large glass lamps and wax tapers, a brass lamp stands upon the table, in which they usually burn castor-oil. In the time of society, too, we equally remarked the proportionably smaller influence of Europe. Cards are much less frequently called in as a resource than in the other capitanias; but the louder is the conversation, which alternates with singing and dancing."

The singing of the Paulista ladies is described as simple and unaffected. The national songs are chiefly pastoral and amatory: those of Brazilian origin are said to be the best. The guitar is the constant accompaniment. As to other instrumental performances, the music of the theatre "resembled a chaos of elementary sounds," scarcely an instrument being properly played; and the representation of the opera "was worthy of those times when the theatrical car of Thespis first passed through the streets of Athens." The actors were all either blacks or mulattoes. A bull-fight was given during the visit of this traveller, but it went off very indifferently; and, to the credit of the Paulistas, the diversion is not popular.*

Literature would seem to have made little progress in St Paulo, since the only library of the city, besides that of the Carmelites, belongs to the bishop:† but

* A wooden circus for bull-fights had only recently been erected, out of the city, by Lieut-Col Muller.

† St Paulo was dignified with the title of a city in 1712; but it was not constituted an episcopal see till 1746.

the Roman classics, we are told, are diligently studied at the gymnasium ; and the Kantean philosophy has actually been introduced through the medium of an indifferent translation. "Antonio Ildefonso Ferreira, the second professor of philosophy, had made himself pretty well acquainted with the system of the northern philosopher ; and we were very agreeably surprised," says the Bavarian professor, "at finding the terms and ideas of the German school naturalized on American ground." There is a theological seminary, at which young ecclesiastics are expected to study several years prior to taking orders ; but they are not so strict here, we are told, in conferring ordination, as at Rio, Pernambuco, and other Brazilian cities. In what that strictness consists, which prevails elsewhere, we are not informed, nor what is the character of the Paulista clergy. Mr Mawe, however, represents them as "free from that excessive bigotry and illiberality which are the reproach of the neighbouring colonies." He admits, at the same time, their ignorance.

The city is situated on an eminence in the extensive plain of Piratininga, at the angle of the confluence of the Tamandatahi, which washes it on the west, with the Hynhangabahu, which flows on the eastern side. The style of architecture, with the frequent latticed balconies, indicates that it is above a century old. The streets are broad, light, and cleanly ; some of them are well paved. The houses, mostly two stories high, are formed of strong planks or wicker-work, filled up with clay, and white-washed : they are, in fact, *casas de taipa*, literally mud houses, stone or brick being rarely used ; but they are said to be very durable.* The residence of the governor, for-

* The mode of constructing these buildings is thus described by Mr Mawe. "A frame is constructed of six moveable planks placed edgewise, opposite each other, and secured in this position by cross pieces bolted with moveable pins. Earth

merly the Jesuits' college, is built in a good style; it is, however, much out of repair. The episcopal palace and the Carmelite convent are large and stately edifices, and the cathedral and some other churches* are spacious; but the ornaments are not in good taste, and the style of architecture is plain and poor. The city is divided into two parishes; that of the cathedral, and that of the church of St Efigenia. It contains three monasteries, Franciscan, Benedictine, and Carmelite; two *recolhimentos*, or nunneries; a misericordia, various "hermitages," and three hospitals. The inhabitants are indebted to Lieutenant-colonel Muller for three stone bridges thrown over the two streams above-mentioned, which unite below the town: in the construction of these, he has rendered a far more important service to the city, than by the erection of a circus for bull-fights. The population, including the dependent parishes, was estimated, Dr Von Spix says, at above 30,000 souls, of which half

is put in by small quantities, which the workmen beat with rammers, and occasionally moisten with water to give it consistency. Having filled the frame, or trough, they remove it, and continue the same operation till the whole shell of the house is completed, taking care to leave vacancies, and put in the window-frames, door-frames, and beams, as they proceed. The mass, in course of time, becomes indurated, the walls are pared perfectly smooth inside, and take any colour the owner chooses to give them: they are generally enriched with very ingenious devices. This species of structure is durable: I have seen some houses thus built that have lasted two hundred years; and most of them have several stories. The roofs are made to project two or three feet beyond the wall, in order to throw off the rain to a distance from the base. Spouts might be a more effectual preservative against wet, but their use is little known here. They cover their houses with gutter-tiles; but, though the country affords excellent clay, and plenty of wood, very few bricks are burnt."—*Mawe's Travels*, p. 94.

* Mr Mawe says eight churches, but he must include the chapels of the religious establishments.

were whites, or such as are called so, and half people of colour; but Mr Henderson, possibly from more recent documents, makes it between 35 and 40,000.* The whole population of the capitania, which amounted in the year 1777 to only about 117,000, had increased, in the year 1808, to 200,478 ; in 1814 to 211,928; and in 1815, to 215,021 souls. Of the latter number, the proportions of the three comarcas were, St Paulo, 127,349 ; Curytiba, 35,841 ; Hytu, 51,831. Of these, 115,103 were whites, 4,866 free blacks, 44,285 free mulattoes, and 50,767 (not one fourth) black and mulatto slaves. The mortality is to the population as 1 to 46. St Paulo is esteemed a most healthy situation ; and the climate, Dr Von Spix says, is one of the most agreeable in the world. Its situation, almost under the tropic of Capricorn, as well as its elevation of 1,200 feet above the surface of the sea at Santos, gives the city all the charms of a tropical climate, without any great inconvenience from heat. It stands in lat. 23° 33′ 10″ S. and long. 46° 39′ 10″ W.

The whole province of St Paulo is peculiarly well adapted for the breeding of cattle, on account of the extensive plains which form a large proportion of its surface, on which all kinds of cattle, but particularly oxen, horses, and mules, thrive exceedingly well. The horses are very fine, and in general docile: when trained, they make excellent chargers. Their size is from twelve and a half to fourteen and a half hands high. The breed of sheep is quite unattended to, mut-

* According to the official census given by Dr V. Spix, the population of the city in 1815. was not more than 25,313 souls, of whom 12,274 were whites, 845 free blacks, 6239 free mulattoes, and 5,955 slaves. The houses were 4142. In 1811, according to a statistical report cited by Mr Mawe, the number of houses was 4017, and the population 23,764. He reckons the clergy of all orders at 500 : the proportion was not on the increase.

ton being rarely eaten; but here is a very fine and large breed of goats, whose milk is generally used. Mr Mawe mentions also a singular breed of cocks, resembling the English in shape and plumage, but their crow is peculiar, very loud, and the last note is prolonged for fifteen or twenty seconds. "When their voice is good, they are much esteemed, and are sent for as curiosities from all parts of Brazil." Cotton and coffee do not thrive very well here, and the sugar-cane but indifferently. Although, according to official returns, it contained, in 1808, no fewer than 458 sugar-mills and 601 stills, the sugar or treacle and rum produced were little more than were required for private consumption. Little mandioc is cultivated, but maize to a great extent, and a considerable quantity is sent to Rio. The gardens in the city and its vicinity are laid out, Mr Mawe says, with great taste, and many of them with curious elegance. The jasmine is here a favourite tree, and bears flowers perennially, as does the rose. Carnations, pinks, passion-flowers, &c. grow luxuriantly. Bees are by no means uncommon, and though insects are numerous, the mosquito is less troublesome than in Rio or in La Plata. The environs have a high degree of rural beauty.

Santos is the only harbour in the province which has a direct intercourse with Europe. Though only twelve leagues distant from St Paulo, it is as much cut off from it by the difficulties of the road, and the want of water communication, as if the distance were four times as great. The road over the Cubatâo, (as that part of the *Serra do Mar* is called, which rises between the capital and the coast,) though it was much improved by Franca e Horta when governor-general, still does not allow of articles being transported in any other way than on the backs of mules. Great expense and labour, therefore, are required to bring to the capital merely a bell or any heavy article.

The two other sea-ports of the province, Paranagua and Cananea, are both inconsiderable: the former is 58 leagues, the other 67 leagues from St Paulo. The trade of the province is, therefore, comparatively small, and the proportion of pecuniary wealth inferior to that of the more northern provinces. "Even in the capital," says Dr Von Spix, "there is almost a scarcity of current coin, to which the inhabitant of the province is still more indifferent, because, living in patriarchal simplicity, he is a stranger to many European wants, and considers himself as richer in the produce of his great herds, than by the introduction of European money and European luxuries." But, unhappily, this patriarchal simplicity implies a state of things but little removed from moral and intellectual barbarism. The state of manufactures corresponds to that of trade. The domestic manufacture of course woollens, that of common white beaver hats, and lace-making, are the only ones of consequence.* "A little course cotton," says Mr Mawe, "is spun by the hand, and woven into cloth, which serves for a variety of wearing apparel, sheets, &c. They make a beautiful kind of network for hammocks, which are trimmed with lace, and form an elegant piece of furniture, being slung low, so as to answer the purpose of sofas. The ladies are particularly fond of using them, especially when the heat of the weather disposes to ease and indolence. The making of lace is a general employment for females, some of whom excel in it. The shop-keepers here are a numerous class, who, as in most colonial

* From official documents cited by Dr Von Spix, it appears, that the total exports of the capitania of St Paulo in 1813, amounted to 666,942,840 *rees*, or about 190,000*l*., of which not 15,000*l*. was exported to Europe direct, five-sixths being sent to Rio. The imports in the same year amounted to 766, 105,028, *rees*, about 218,000*l*., of which a similar proportion was drawn immediately from Oporto. The chief articles of export are sugars, hides, rice, and Peruvian bark.

deal in almost every thing, and sometimes make ortunes. Here are few physicians, but many caries; some silversmiths, whose articles are r indifferent both in metal and workmanship; and shoemakers in great numbers; and joiners, anufacture very beautiful wood, but are not so ıte in their charges as the former classes of nen. In the outskirts of the city live a number ole Indians, who make earthenware for culi- urposes, large water-jars, and a variety of other s, ornamented with some taste. The greater tion of the inhabitants consist of farmers and husbandmen, who cultivate small portions of on which they breed large stocks of pigs and for sale. With these the market is generally ıpplied, and, in the fruit season, is also stored ines, grapes, peaches, guavas, bananas, a few , and an enormous quantity of quinces." Such e trades of St Paulo. The low state of the arts may be judged of from the circumstance, e wealthiest graziers are obliged to tan the hides elves, or salt them raw for exportation. A go- ent manufactory for arms had recently been trans- hither from Rio, and placed under the superin- ıce of Lieutenant-colonel Muller; but the eight ıg masters were all Germans. The bishop amu- nself with breeding silk-worms, which are said uce a very beautiful thread, and the mulberry-tree to great perfection in this climate, so that the e of silk might be carried on with great success. ochineal insect is also found in many parts of ovince, and might be made to furnish an equally ble branch of trade. But the aversion of the tas to laborious work, so long as they can ob- he rich gifts of nature without trouble, have o prevented the improvement of either branch ductive industry. It is an auspicious circum- , however, that the rage for mining has passed

away: the smelting-house of St Paulo is broken up, and the gold-hunters have gradually emigrated to the richer provinces of Minas, Goyaz, and Matto Grosso.*

In proceeding to give a sketch of the topography of the province, we shall first avail ourselves of Mr Mawe's account of his journey across the mountains.

FROM SANTOS TO ST PAULO.

Approaching from St Catherine's between the valuable harbour of San Francisco and that of Santos, the coast is low and flat; but, on nearing Santos, it becomes bolder, and the main land is elevated and mountainous. The harbour of Santos has a safe entrance, and is very secure: it is a strait, having the island of St Vincente to the left, for the extent of half a mile, when it takes a different direction. Here is situated the port, which has good anchorage, with regular soundings towards the shore. "The part called the narrows is defended by two forts, on passing which there is a kind of lagoon of three or four leagues in length, almost full of mangroves, terminated by the town of Santos. The river, or lagoon, has three or four fathoms water and a muddy bottom."

Santos is one of the oldest European settlements in Brazil. In common with St Paulo, it is said to owe its origin to the first shipwreck on the island of

* About a century ago, the country round the city abounded with gold, and it was not till they had exhausted it by washing that the inhabitants thought of employing themselves in husbandry. The grit-stone with which the streets of St Paulo are paved, is an alluvial formation, containing gold; and after heavy rain, many particles of the precious metal are even now found in the clinks and hollows, which are diligently sought for by the poorer people. A city thus literally paved with gold, surely claims to be considered as the veritable El Dorado.

St Vincente, on the northern side of which it is situated. The captaincy of St Vincente was the first of those granted by the crown to the original donatories.* The town of that name, the ancient capital of the province, is situated on the southern coast of the island, at the entrance of the bar, seven miles S. W. of Santos. In former times a flourishing town, it has now sunk into insignificance, its commerce having been transferred to Santos, which is better situated. The inhabitants of St Vincente are chiefly fishermen. Santos was erected into a town in 1545. Its misericordia is the most ancient in Brazil. Besides this, it contains a Franciscan convent, an *hospicio* of Benedictines, and one of slippered Carmelites, and various chapels. The Jesuits' college, which had been suffered to fall into a dilapidated state, has been repaired and turned into a military hospital. The town is tolerably well-built, the houses being, for the most part, of stone. The population, consisting chiefly of merchants, shopkeepers, and artificers, amounted, at the time of Mr Mawe's journey, to between 6 and 7000 souls. The situation is by no means healthy, as the country round is low, woody, and frequently deluged with rain, owing, it is supposed, to the high mountains in the vicinity, which arrest the clouds. Several rivulets flowing from the heights, after intersecting the land in all directions, unite a little above the town in one great river. The rice of this district, which is grown in great quantities, is esteemed the best in Brazil, and the bananas are equally noted. The port is the resort of many vessels trading to the Plata; the Spanish territories, as well as Rio Grande do Sul, being supplied from hence with rice, sugar, coffee, and mandioc, in exchange for hides and tallow, which are exported to Europe. Its intercourse with St Paulo is considerable, several

* See page 16.

hundred mules frequently arriving in the course o day, laden with the produce of the interior, for wh they take back salt, iron, earthenwares, and Europ manufactures. For the traffic of the immediate v nity it has the convenience of water-carriage, the er being navigable up to Cubatão, a distance of al twenty miles, and only half a mile from the foot of mountains.

The inhabitants of Santos are characterised by Mawe as proverbially notorious for inhospita He supposes that the "great influx of strangers renegadoes from all nations" into this, as well as o towns on the coast, had completely steeled the he of the people against all claims on their good-wil civility. In this respect, they are a striking ex tion to the Brazilians of the interior.

Not far to the north of Santos Bay is the fine land of St Sebastian, about seven leagues in len It lies off the point of Toque Toque, and the s between it and the main, about two leagues in wi affords an excellent passage and a good harbour ships of war. The land on both sides is bold steep, and being well cultivated, has a very grand rich appearance. In front of the island, near embouchure of a small river, is seated the town o Sebastian. It stands on a low tract of ground at commencement of a fertile plain, but which was many years almost abandoned, in consequence of impolitic restrictions which prevented the inhabit from exporting the produce to the best markets. town is inconsiderable, with indifferent houses, streets of sand, and is by no means, Mr Mawe s a desirable, or even tolerable residence for a stran being exposed to all the inconveniences peculia low, sandy situations, among which rank imm swarms of mosquitoes. It contained, however 1807, from 2 to 3000 inhabitants, "an indigent not very industrious people," who subsisted for

art on fish. A little indigo was made, and olerably good tobacco grown in the neighbour- The town was formerly much noted for its rge canoes, made of the solid timber. "Some n," says Mr Mawe, "I have seen, of almost ble dimensions." The neighbouring island, more elevated, has the advantage of purer air, reputed to produce the best sugar, rum, and o, as well as the finest cattle, in all Brazil. e northern coast of the island stands Villa inceza, created a town in 1809, with a chapel ted to our Lady of Luz, which at present serves whole island. On the eastern part, there is *naçao* for whale-fishing. Between four and les to the east of St Sebastian, near the beach, pretty but poor village of Bairro, where a con- le quantity of earthenware is made by the for the market of Rio. The men are occu- fishing. Here is a large Franciscan convent, ilt and finely situated, fronting the bay. Near- ty miles N.E. of Sebastian, and near the con- f the province, is the small town of Ubatuba. en this and Bairro are the bays of Flamengos aquiriquere, both capable of receiving many

ving ascended the river Cubatão (or Cubatam) antos to the small *arraial* (military station) to it gives name, Mr Mawe procured a guide and -mules, and proceeded to ascend the mountain The road is good and well paved, but narrow, n account of the rugged acclivities, is cut in a g direction, with very frequent and abrupt turn- ut continually on the ascent. In many places, ut through the solid rock for several feet; in , along the perpendicular sides; and frequently s over the tops of conical mountains along the f precipices. These dangerous places are

guarded by parapets, but, in case of meeting a of mules, the passage is in many parts pe "After ascending for an hour and a half," say Mawe, "during which time we made innum turnings, we arrived at a resting-place, near wh a spot a little lower than the road, we found This place, as our guide informed us, was onl way to the summit. We were astonished at t telligence, as the clouds were already so far bel that they obstructed our prospect." The woo so thick in every part, except where the mules that no soil can be seen. The branches of the in some places meet and form an arbour ov road, which shades the traveller from the heat sun, or shelters him from rain. Some pictu streams, bursting from their high sources, occa ly present fine cascades, and crossing the road, their way through many detached round mas granite. "In three hours," continues this tra "we reached the summit, a plain of considerab tent, the lowest estimated height of which is feet.* The surface is chiefly composed of covered with sand. The sea, though distant miles, seemed to wash the foot of the mou The level part of the coast, and the port of below us, came not within the angle of vision. vancing about a mile and a half, we came to a

* "The millions of crowns," remarks Mr Mawe, must have been expended in clearing the woods and in the course of this road, and in cutting through t rocks for a considerable distance, as well as in p through the whole extent of the ridge, afford no mean the enterprising spirit of the Brazilians. Few public even in Europe, are superior to it; and if we consider reason of the scanty population of the district throug it passes, the labour bestowed on it must have been p most dearly, we shall hardly find one in any country completed under similar disadvantages."

he road cut several feet deep through the rock, and observed in this quarter many small streams, which, hough contiguous to the sea, all flow in a south-western course to an immense distance, and uniting, form the great river Correntes (Parana), which joins the Plata. After crossing several rivulets, and passing a few houses, we arrived at a tolerable inn, belonging to an officer of militia, where we were provided with milk, coffee, and fowls. It is distant sixteen or twenty miles from St Paulo, and may be considered as half way between that town and Santos. We then proceeded through a much more open country, which bore the traces of former cultivation, and seemed to have been of late much neglected. As we drew nearer St Paulo, the road improved, and was enlivened by a greater number of habitations. We passed two convents, distinguished by large crosses erected before them. The land is watered by several fine streams. St Paulo, although on an elevated site, is not observed at any great distance in this direction. In its immediate neighbourhood, the river runs parallel to the road, which it sometimes partially overflows and covers with sand. On entering the town, we were struck with the appearance of its houses, stuccoed in various colours." * The city is approached to more advantage from the north. Seen from the eminence of Nossa Senhora da Penha, it has a very grand appearance. Dr Von Spix, who visited St Paulo ten years after Mr Mawe, arrived by this route from Rio. The road

FROM RIO DE JANEIRO TO ST PAULO

Has already been described as far as Santa Cruz. A very good road leads from that town, almost in a straight line, to a bridge, where formerly was a barrier

* Mawe's Travels, pp 86—91.

at which all travellers were examined, to pr
smuggling of gold dust. The country is an e
watered by numerous pools and streams, b
the S. and W. by the Serra do Mar, w
sends out a branch in a direction nearly
west, extending, under the name of Serr
Grande, to the Bay of Angra dos Reys.
after leaving the plains of Santa Cruz, is a
ascent to the summit over which it passe
turns from the coast into the interior, runni
the thickly wooded mountains, through se
watered valleys, but lonesome and gloomy
absence of cultivation. As the traveller
these valleys contract on all sides, and th
becomes more and more difficult and dang
the increasing steepness of the mountains.
silence reigns here; and, with the exceptio
wretched clay huts, or spots recently cleare
he meets with nothing to remind him of m
majestic scenes of savage nature. At Ret
erable fazenda in a narrow, swampy valle
from the little villa of S. João Marcos,
Spix and his companion passed the first n
open air. "The uraponga had ceased his
sounding notes; the swarms of grasshop
menced, as night set in, their monoton
at intervals interrupted by the notes of a
resembling a drum, the lament of the cap
the dull cry of the goat-sucker. Affect
constantly returning impressions, we felt o
a strange and solemn mood in the lonely
which was further increased when the
with all the splendour of the southern con
beamed on the dark forest, and millions
beetles fluttered in luminous circles th
hedges, till at length a heavy rain veiled a
ness. The woody ridge of mountains, thro
we had hitherto travelled, is the highest p

branch of the Serra do Mar, which, in general, about three thousand feet high, runs towards the sea-coast from the principal chain, which runs to the north. The next mountains over which we passed are lower, and rise at longer intervals. The road is sometimes cut very deep in the soil, which consists of red clay, is very narrow, and, when two troops of mules meet, as it often happens, dangerous. This kind of road is, however, welcome in luxuriant forests, because the confining all travellers to one narrow path, prevents it from being quickly overgrown, as would otherwise happen. Paved roads and bridges are, of course, to be found nowhere in these solitudes, though the ground in the neighbourhood of the numerous streams is quite swampy, especially in the rainy season."

Four leagues from Retiro is the fazenda dos Negros; beyond which the road crosses a second chain of granite mountains, stretching from N.W. to S.E. towards the sea, and from its most northern valleys sending the Paratininga and the Rio Turbo to the Paraiba. To the south of the *freguezia* (parish) of Bananal, several other chains of mountains nearly parallel, and all thickly wooded, run from the west towards the ocean. "We passed," says Dr V. Spix, "in two days' journey, the first of these, the outlines of which are more rounded and of more agreeable form, having between them some light valleys with pools and rich meadows. Several colonists have settled in these valleys by the side of small streams; and their extensive plantations of Turkish wheat give the first appearance of culture to those lonely tracts. The third mountain ridge, *Morro Formoza*, resembles, by its bolder forms and larger and irregular masses, the mountains round about Rio: it constitutes the frontier of the provinces of Rio and St Paulo, and divides the rivers in this eastern branch of the Serra do Mar.

"The road from the *Morro Formoza* gr
clines through low mountains, which are
and agreeable, and where population and
crease. On the third day, after we had lef
and passed the river and the little place B
reached St Anna das Arêas, a pretty
town, but which having arisen within thes
thirty years in this thickly-wooded mount
the settlement of a few poor colonists,
course, as yet present a picture of high p
The low houses, built of slight laths, simply
en with twigs and plastered with clay, an
church, which is constructed in the sam
seem very ephemeral, so that these dwellin
erected merely as temporary places of refug
derers. We found by far the greater part
towns in the interior of Brazil like this town
rarity of a well-built and comfortable house
excited regret for the conveniences and clea
our native land. In the neighbourhood
there is still a considerable village of Indian
mains of the numerous tribes who, previous
occupation of the Serra do Mar by the Pa
habited the whole of the extensive forests of
and are now either extinct, or, mixed with
and mulattoes, live in a state of half-civilizati
the colonists. They are still distinguished
dolence and almost untameable obstinacy
forefathers, and have but little intercourse
colonists, whose plantations and cattle frequ
fer from the predatory attacks of these tro
neighbours."

The travellers halted for the night in the
ley of Tacasava, where they found several
encamped, who were conveying fowls to the

* It had only lately been raised by the king to th
villa, and is not mentioned by Henderson.

ı distance of about a hundred leagues! The
ay, they saw pass the magnificent caravan of
shop of Cordova, who, driven from his resi-
by the political revolutions in the Spanish colo-
was travelling, with a Portuguese escort, from
ı Video to Rio, where he intended to embark
ırope. He had already been four months upon
ıd in traversing eleven degrees of latitude: he
have returned by sea to Europe in less time.
ɔ days more, still proceeding in a south-westerly
on, brought the travellers to the last summit of
rra do Mar, from which they looked down on
and pleasant valley, bounded to the west, at
tance of about two miles, by a part of the Serra
ntiqueira. The Paraïba, after issuing from the
valleys of the first chain of mountains, flows
is valley towards the north, and at Jacarehy,
ı direction quite opposite to its former course.
rena (or Guaypacare), a small town near the
ıa, at which they halted for the night, a side
ranches out, which leads to Minas Geraes.
ad from St Paulo to Minas crosses the Paraïba at
ints; the one above mentioned, called Porto do
, and another a league before reaching Lorena,
Porto da Cachoeira. South of Lorena, the
character of the forests disappeared, and plains
ıtly rising hills succeeded, covered with scattered
and excessive tracts of verdure. Though in
ılaces swampy, this part of the valley of the
a is one of the most fruitful districts of St
and yields excellent tobacco. Guarantingueta,
ıt stage, styled by Mr Henderson a considera-
n, is situated on a pleasant hill in an extensive
ah near the river. Its Indian name presents a
ıble specimen (Dr V. Spix remarks) of the
ɔr observation possessed by the aboriginal in-
ts. "This long word signifies the place
the sun turns back. In fact, the tropic of

Capricorn is scarcely a degree south of the villa which pleases by its cheerful appearance and some traces of a superior mode of life. Since our departure from Rio, this was the first place where we saw any glass windows, which, in Brazil, always indicate prosperity, and, in the interior, even luxury. On the other hand, the traveller is surprised at the want of all regularity and order in the exercise of trades. In a place containing some thousand inhabitants, we were obliged to be content with a frugal meal on an armadillo, which we had shot by the way. The flesh of this animal has, indeed, an agreeable taste, resembling fowl, but is very fat.

"The road goes from the villa, always south-west through the valley of the Paraïba. To the left of us lay a pleasant, well-cultivated chain of hills, planted with beans, maize, mandiocca roots, and tobacco. On the right, the broad valley extends to the chain of Serra do Mantiqueira, and bearing scarcely any trace of culture, is covered with thick, low bushes of myrtles, cujawas, &c. a dreary and desolate prospect. Only the hope that thousands of happy people will one day inhabit this highly gifted country can cheer the mind of the traveller. After proceeding a mile, we reached the shrine of Nossa Senhora Apparecida, a chapel situated on an eminence, with a few houses about it. It was erected about seventy years ago, a long period in this country; it is partly built of stone and adorned with gilding, bad paintings in fresco, and some in oil. The wonder-working image of the Virgin attracts many pilgrims from the whole province and from Minas. We met many of these pilgrims when we proceeded on our journey on Christmas eve. Every body here, women as well as men, travel on mules or on horseback; frequently the man takes a woman behind him on the same saddle. The dress of these planters is quite adapted to their local situation: a brown beaver hat with a very broad brim, which

serves, at the same time, as a protection against the sun and the rain; a long, very wide blue frock (*poncho*,) with a hole at the top for the head; jacket and trowsers, of dark calico; high unblacked boots, fastened below the knee with a leathern strap and buckle; a long knife with a silver handle, which serves as a defence, and sticks either in the boot at the knee, or in the girdle, and is used at meals as well as on other occasions, are the chief characteristics of a travelling Paulista. The women wear long, wide surtouts of cloth, and round hats."

A wretched *rancho* at As Taibas was their lodging at night. The next day, the eighteenth from leaving Rio, the travellers continued their journey in a S.S.W. direction to Pendamhongaba, or Pindamonhangaba, a town consisting of a church and some rows of low huts scattered on a hill. In their way, they crossed the three mountain streams of Parapitinga, Agoa, Preta, and Ribeirão da Villa. Three miles to the S.E. of Pendamhongaba, is Thaubaté, one of the most important towns in the province, and rivaling the capital in antiquity. It is situated on a flat hill, and the Franciscan convent, surrounded by some rows of majestic palms, has an imposing appearance. The houses, however, are of the humblest description, seldom above one story high, *casas da taipa*, with a slight roof of pantiles and shingles. The interior, as described by Von Spix, corresponds to the slight construction and scanty materials. "The entrance, which is generally half or entirely closed by a latticed door, leads directly into the largest room in the house, which being without boards, and often with unwhitewashed walls, resembles a barn. This division serves for the habitation of the family. Store-rooms, and in some cases a side room for guests, occupy the remainder of the front of the building. The back part contains the apartments for the wife and the rest of the family, who, according to the Portuguese fashion, with-

draw on the entrance of strangers. From t
enter the varanda, which generally runs alc
whole length of the building, and opens into the
yard. A similar varanda is sometimes annexe
front of the house. The kitchen and servants'
ments, generally miserable sheds, lie oppos
house at the further end of the court. The fi
of these houses is confined to the most necessa
cles. Often they have no more than a few
benches and chairs, a table, a large chest, an
consisting of a straw mat, or an ox-hide, on
supported by four pegs. Instead of beds, the
ans almost always make use of the woven or
hammocks (*marqueiras*), the best and most du
which are manufactured in the provinces of St
and Minas, of white or coloured cotton. The
ler no where meets with any wells, and must th
be satisfied with rain, spring, or river water, fo
purpose."

Besides the Franciscan convent, Thaubaté c
according to Cazal, a church dedicated to St F
a convent of the Terceira order, and cha
Our Lady of Pilar and Rosario. It is reckoi
wards of 100 miles N.E. of St Paulo, seven
Mugi das Cruzes, forty from Jacarehy, an
from the Paraïba, near a small stream. In
times, when the thirst for gold was at its height
the Paulistas, a government establishment for t
gold was founded here; and the rivalry betw
Taubatenos and the Paulistas of Piratininga,
the pitch of a rancorous and implacable feud;
whenever the two parties met in any of their
sions, sanguinary contests always ensued.
enmity," says Dr V. Spix, "is said to still c
in silence, though the inhabitants of Thaubat
now entirely renounced the occupation of gold-w
in other provinces, and follow agriculture and
ing of cattle in their own country, which is quite

tute of the precious metal." The women manufacture mats and hand-baskets of grass, which are sent to Rio. A few vines are also cultivated here, and the fruit is of an agreeable flavour.

Two days, journeying further south through verdant plains alternating with low woods, brought the travellers again to the banks of the Para'ba, where, at the town of Jacarehy (crocodile river), it bends round to the north. In their way they passed the vendas of Campo Grande, Sahida do Campo, and Paranangaba, and the small village of St Joze. At Jacarehy, an endemic swelling of the glands of the neck is very prevalent, to a degree surpassing any thing found in Europe. These enormous goitres, frequently covering the whole neck, give a horrid appearance to the natives, who are, for the most part, mulattoes; yet, they are regarded here, Dr V. Spix says, as a beauty rather than a deformity. He attributes them to the marshy exhalations of the low valley of the Para'ba, which is often covered with fogs, the muddy, lukewarm water of the river, which supplies the place of spring water, and the uncleanliness of the people. As a remedy, at the commencement of the disease, it is customary to drink water which has stood for several days upon the pounded mass of large ant-hills. The negroes use gum-arabic with good success. Twelve miles to the S. of this place, is the Indian aldeia da Escada, and near it, a large Carmelite convent close to the Para'iba, which Dr V. Spix found abandoned. The Indians in these parts are characterised by a deformity and ugliness, and a gloomy stupidity, which seem to indicate a degenerated race. This traveller describes a very singular race of mestizoes, several families of which he also met with in this district. They are called, he says, Cafusoes. "Their external appearance is one of the strangest that a European can meet with. They are slender and muscular; in particular, the muscles of

the breast and arms are very strong; the feet, on the contrary, in proportion, weaker. Their colour is a dark copper, or coffee-brown. Their features, on the whole, have more of the Ethiopic than of the American race. The countenance is oval, the cheek-bones high, but not so broad as in the Indians; the nose broad and flattened, but neither turned up nor much bent; the mouth broad, with thick but equal lips, which, as well as the lower jaw, project but little; the black eyes have a more open and freer look than in the Indians, yet are still a little oblique, if not standing so much inward as in them, on the other hand, not turned outwards as in the Ethiopians. But what gives these mestizoes a peculiarly striking appearance, is the excessively long hair of the head, which, especially at the end, is half curled, and rises almost perpendicularly from the forehead to the height of a foot, or a foot and a half, thus forming a prodigious and very ugly kind of peruke. This strange head of hair, which, at first sight, seems more artificial than natural, and almost puts one in mind of the *plica Polonica*, is not a disease, but merely a consequence of their mixed descent, and is the mean between the wool of the negro, and the long, stiff hair of the American. This natural peruke is often so high, that the wearers must stoop low to go in and out of the usual doors of their huts; the thick hair is, besides, so entangled, that all idea of combing it is out of the question. This conformation of the hair gives the Cafusoes a resemblance to the Papuas in New Guinea."

The low mountains at Escada are the last branches of the Serra do Mar. The road descends considerably to Mugi das Cruzes, a considerable town, about two miles beyond the river Tieté, one of the tributaries of the Parana. Here are a church and three religious establishments. The inhabitants are chiefly graziers; but coffee and sugar are cultivated to some extent. It is thirty-five miles E.N.E. of St Paulo,

forty N. of Santos. The twenty-fourth day after leaving Rio, (the seventh from Thaubaté,) the travellers entered the capital.

GOLD MINES OF JARAGUA.

Beyond the plain which nearly encircles St Paulo, the country is mountainous. About twenty-four miles from the city are the gold mines of Jaragua, the first discovered in this country, and which, on account of the immense treasures they produced a hundred years ago, occasioned this district to be regarded as the Peru of Brazil. After being for some time abandoned, the gold-washing had recently been resumed, at the period of Dr V. Spix's visit, by the proprietor of the mountain. Mr Mawe visited the mines in 1807. On the banks of the Tiete, which he crossed, he observed "some situations truly enviable," rich tracts of teeming soil, under a genial climate, wholly neglected and solitary. The mountain of Jaragua is one of the most southern branches of the Serra do Mantiqueira, which, after running for more than fifty miles to the north, disappears in this latitude. The rock is granite, sometimes gneiss, containing a portion of horn-blende with mica. The earth washed for gold, Dr V. Spix describes as "a ferruginous sand-stone conglomerate;" which agrees with Mr Mawe's account. "The soil," he says, "is red and remarkably ferruginous. The gold lies, for the most part, in a *stratum* of rounded pebbles and gravel, called *cascalhão*, incumbent on the solid rock. In the valleys, where there is water, occur frequent excavations, made by the gold-washers, some of them fifty or a hundred feet wide, and eighteen or twenty feet deep. On many of the hills, where

water can be collected for washing, particles of go are found in the soil, scarcely deeper than the roo of the grass."

The mode of obtaining the gold, Mr Mawe thus d scribes. "Where water of sufficiently high level ca be commanded, the ground is cut in steps, each twe ty or thirty feet wide, two or three broad, and abo one deep. Near the bottom, a trench is cut to th depth of two or three feet. On each step stand s or eight negroes, who, as the water flows gently fro above, keep the earth continually in motion with sho els, until the whole is reduced to liquid mud, an washed below. The particles of gold contained i this earth descend to the the trench, where, by reaso of their specific gravity, they quickly precipitate Workmen are continually employed at the trench t remove the stones, and clear away the surface, whic operation is much assisted by the current of wate which falls into it. After five days' washing, the pre cipitation in the trench is carried to some convenien stream to undergo a second clearance. For this pur pose, wooden bowls are provided, of a funnel shape about two feet wide at the mouth, and five or six in ches deep, called *gamellas*. Each workman, stand ing in the stream, takes into his bowl five or six pounds weight of the sediment, which generally consists o heavy matter, such as granular oxide of iron, pyrites feruginous quartz, &c. and often precious stones They admit certain quantities of water into the bowls which they move about so dexterously, that the pre cious metal, separating from the inferior and lighte substances, settles to the bottom and sides of the ve sel. They then rinse their bowls in a larger vess of clean water, leaving the gold in it, and begin agai The washing of each bowl-ful occupies from five eight or nine minutes. The gold produced is e tremely variable in quality and in the size of its par cles, some of which are so minute that they flo

others are found as large as peas, and, not unntly, much larger. This operation is superinby overseers, as the result is of considerable ance. When the whole is finished, the gold is upon a brass pan, over a slow fire, to be dried, a convenient time, is taken to the Permutationwhere it is weighed and a fifth is reserved for own. The remainder is smelted with muriate cury, then cast into ingots, assayed, and stampcording to its intrinsic value, a certificate of is given with it. After a copy of that instruas been duly entered at the Mint-office, the inrculate as specie."*

IRON MINES OF YPANEMA.

ut twenty leagues from the city, in the mountGuarassojava, there are vast mines of magnee-stone. A royal foundery has been erected on nks of the Ypanema or (Hipannema,), round has grown up a small village. The mines, known to exist, had not been regularly worked 0, when the Conde de Linhares brought here any of Swedish miners, who began by erecting len workshop on the banks of the river, in hey had two small furnaces. Under the adation of the Conde da Palma, the establishment t on a more respectable footing; and a handnd extensive edifice had just been completed, Dr Von Spix visited Ypanema in January which was to be placed under the superintenof Lieut-Colonel Varnhagen, and founders xpected to arrive from Germany. A hospital sick workmen had also been erected, which ended by two surgeons. The only difficulty ated by Dr Von Spix in extending the manu-

* Mawe's Travels, pp. 108—10.

factory, was the future want of proper wood for fuel, when the neighbouring forests should be exhausted. The ore appeared good, containing partly ninety per cent. "Yet we frequently heard complaints," he adds, "that the iron extracted from it was too brittle, and that many instruments made of it were not durable. When the best method of treating the ore, especially in the operation of refining, is discovered, and the exportation is facilitated by making a good road or canal to the coast, Ypanema, with its incredible abundance in iron ore, will be able to supply not only Brazil, but all the rest of the American continent, with that metal."

The road to the foundery leads S.S.W. from St Paulo, over a hilly and partly cultivated country, having the mountain of Jaragua on the right. From Jacarehy, the road gradually ascends, and passing the parish of Cutia, and the village of S. Roque, leads to the villa of Sorocaba, distant sixty miles west from St Paulo. This agreeable and flourishing town lies on the small river of the same name, which flows into the Tiete to the west of it. The population is stated by Cazal to comprise 1777 families, two thirds of whom are whites: they breed cattle and ponies, and cultivate cotton, sugar, and Indian corn. It contains a church, an *hospicio* of Benedictines, a hermitage of St Antonio, and a recolhimento of women. This place is a great thoroughfare and market for mules from Rio Grande do Sul, above 30,000 of which, it is calculated, annually pass through Sorocaba. A duty of from 1280 to 2000 rees (7*s*. to 11*s*. 6*d*.) per head is paid to the crown on their entrance into the new capitania; and as this is repeated with certain modifications on the frontiers of every province, the price of these animals, which is here from twelve to twenty-five piastres, becomes doubled and trebled by the time they reach Bahia, Pernambuco, and Seara. Its lying on the road to Ypanema, distant only two

leagues, or about seven miles, will tend to render it still more considerable. It is in the comarca of Hitu.

St Joâo de Ypanema is seated on an amphitheatrical eminence on the banks of the river of the same name, which here spreads out into a lake. "Beautiful plains from the foreground, and the iron mountain of Guarassojava* covered with a dark wood, which, on the north-west side, descends into the valley, makes the background of the landscape. The neatly whitewashed houses, which lie scattered along the hill, at the foot of which stand the extensive buildings of the manufactory, and the expression of noisy activity and industry which reign here, seem to transport the European into some manufactory in a beautiful, wild district of his own country."

"The mountain," continues Dr V. Spix, "which produces this extraordinary quantity of ore, rises behind the place, a quarter of a mile to the west, and extends, as a rather insulated mountain ridge, a league in length from south to north. The elevation above the Ypanema is about 1000 feet. It is almost every where covered with thick woods, from which, in the morning and evening, are heard the noisy howls of the brown monkeys. We ascended it, taking the narrow road through the bushes, by which the mules bring the ore to the manufactory. After we had gone winding up the mountain for a short way through thick wood, we found ourselves all at once before some gigantic rocks of magnetic iron-stone, which rise almost perpendicularly to the height of forty feet and more. Around them, partly upon, and partly under the surface of the ground, which is a very rich mould, lie innumerable loose pieces, from the size of a fist to considerable blocks. The surface of the masses of rock is almost every where flat and even,

* The word signifies *sun-shader*, in allusion to the great extent of land obscured by its shade.

with slight depressions and cavities, and has a crust of imperfectly oxydated iron-stone, which is some lines thick. We did not observe that the great masses caused any motion in a suspended needle; but small pieces, especially when just struck off, had a considerable effect on it. The mass of this magnetic iron-stone is either quite compact or traversed by veins of red ochre. This iron-stone appears to be in immediate contact with a yellow quartzy sand-stone, with an argillaceous cement: at least, the latter is seen in several places at the foot of the mountain, as well as in Ypanema itself. A dirty lavender-blue primitive clay-slate, tinged brown in the rifts, which runs from east to west, lies on the top of the mountain, here and there, over the iron. Upon the *Morro de Guarassojava*, and probably in veins of the magnetic iron-stone, there is a porous quartz-stone of a light brown colour, the cavities in which are covered with a bluish-white chalcedony, with a crystalized surface."*

Dr Von Spix states, that in no part of Brazil are there so many melancholic and hysteric patients as here, for which he is at a loss to assign any better reason, than their almost exclusive use of a coarsely-ground maize flour, rarely baked into bread or cakes, but either brought to table in little baskets, or boiled with water and milk, and sweetened when it is called *canjica*. This diet the German physician pronounces to be difficult of digestion. He hints, however, at a far more likely cause of such complaints, in remarking, that by far the greater part of the diseases which he observed here, were "of syphilitic origin."

ROUTE TO THE FRONTIER OF MINAS GERAES.

From Ypanema, the travellers proceeded to the Villa do Porto Feliz, on the river Tieté, distant five

* Von Spix, vol. ii. pp. 51-2.

leagues and a half, in a north-westerly direction, 25 miles N.N.W. of Sorocaba, and 18 W. of Hitu. In the road, which lay over hilly campos, and through low woody tracts, they did not observe a single house. The Tiete, having been joined by the Rio dos Pinheiros, the Jundiahy, the Capibary, and other small streams, is here from twelve to fifteen fathoms broad, and runs southward between rocky banks, covered with thick forests. Its Indian name is Anhemby. Close to the port, which is nothing more than a creek, a rocky wall rises to the height of forty or fifty feet, called by the natives *Arara-ita-guaba*, i. e. the place where the *araras* (birds so called) eat stones: this was the former name of the town. The surface of the sand-stone rocks is covered with a fine yellowish grey marl, which exhibits an efflorescent white salt; and after the end of the rainy season, the birds are said to flock hither to rub off and lick up the saline efflorescence. In the hotter parts of Brazil, where the surface of the earth presents extensive tracts covered with salt, particularly salt-petre, it is no unusual circumstance for animals to be observed licking the ground. The walls of the low houses at Porto Feliz are often covered with the same substance, deposited by the thick fogs which prevail here, causing, we are told, goitres, intermittent fevers, dropsy, and an almost endemic catarrh. Maize and rice thrive from the same cause that renders the place unhealthy, and generally produce here two hundred and fifty fold. The sugar-cane is also cultivated, but the breeding of cattle is the principal occupation of the inhabitants. From the Rio Ypanema, grassy campos extend southward with little interruption to Curitiba, and into the capitania of Rio Grande, in the whole of which extensive tract the same system of farming is followed, that is described by Dr Von Spix in the following terms.

"Every landholder possesses, according to the extent of his farm, from several hundred to two

thousand, nay, even forty thousand head of cattle. They generally reckon from three to four thousand head on an estate which has two square miles of good pasture. All these roam at liberty in a wild state; but, every farmer keeps besides, as many tame draught oxen and cows as he requires for the purposes of agriculture and for milk, which is partly made into cheese. The attendance on the wild cattle gives but very little trouble: all that is required is, to brand them with the mark of the owner, and to catch the animals intended to be slaughtered. From four to six servants, under the direction of a chief cowherd, perform all these services; they prevent the herds from straying beyond the boundaries, and defend them from the attacks of the ounces, wolves, and wild dogs. These people are almost always on horseback, as their office compels them to ride twenty miles or more in a day. Every year, the whole herd is collected at different times in a place in a high situation, and sometimes fenced in. On this occasion, the mark of the owner is branded on the hind quarter of the beasts one year old, of which they reckon a thousand annually for a herd of five or six thousand. Those of four years old and more, are selected for slaughter. The catching of these, frequently a troublesome and dangerous employment, is executed here, as in the *pampas* of Buenos Ayres, by means of long leathern nooses, which the farmers' servants manage with incredible dexterity.* The tame cattle are kept in the vicinity of

* Mr Mawe, describing this process as practised by the peons of Monte Video, says: "The dexterous mode in which the peons catch their cattle, by throwing a noose over them, has been frequently detailed, but certainly no description can do full justice to their agility. They throw with equal precision and effect, whether at full gallop or at rest. Their method of catching

ıe fazenda, run free in the meadows during the ıy, and are only shut up in the enclosures during e night. The flesh of the tame cattle is preferred that of the wild, because, from their undis- rbed and more quiet way of life, they grow fat oner, and with less fodder. The pasture being good, their milk is excellent; but a cow gives ly a third part of the quantity that good milch ws give in Europe. The hide is always the ıst valuable part of the cattle: it is stripped off, etched upon the ground by means of short pegs, little salted, and dried in the sun. The flesh, t into thin strips, rubbed with salt, and dried in ı air, is an important article of exportation from ı harbours of St Paulo and Rio Grande do Sul, the cities in the north; particularly to Rio de Ja- iro, Bahia, Pernambuco, and Maranham, where, der the names of *Carna seca do Sertão*, *Passoca*, *Carne Charqueda*, it constitutes an essential part the subsistence of all the Brazilians, but especially the negro slaves.

" Besides the breeding of oxen, that of horses l mules likewise occupies several farmers in the ›itania of St Paulo, but is carried on upon a far re extensive scale in Rio Grande do Sul. The ·ses of St Paulo are of a middling size, of slen- · make, and, if they are attended with care, ıuire an elegant carriage, and become excellent ·ers. In general, twenty or thirty of those wild mals herd together, and hardly ever separate. .e animals, when taken (by means of the long ›ses), sometimes trembling with fear, sometimes l of impetuous fury, endeavour, by the strongest ıtortions and the most desperate leaps, to defend mselves against the riders. When the latter

ses, by means of balls attached to leather thongs, is similar, more unerring."—*Travels in Brazil*, *p*. 29.

have succeeded in holding an animal fast by ears and lips with a pair of tongs, in putting a h over his head, and a sheep-skin by way of sa on his back, one of the servants mounts him, endeavours to overcome the obstinacy of the l by means of the whip. After many violent mo and leaps, it is at length so for subdued, th runs furiously away with its rider, and after a course, it in some degree yields to the bridle. A being thus humbled, it stands still with its hanging down, on which all the others sepa from it. The next day, the same exercise is peated: and in a few days more, the horse is ken and fit for riding. The common Pauli and particularly the *Pi los* (the herdsman's serva make use of a very small, flat, wooden sa which is often not even covered with leather. T stirrups are so small that they will only admit great toe: the spurs are fastened to the n heel. The dress of the *Pi.o* consists of a jacket, narrow trowsers, and a flat, round hat tened with a strap, altogether of brown lea made of deer or capivara hides, and is very adapted to protect him against the thorny he through which he must force his way, when pu ing wild animals.

"The wild horses are most frequently of a bl colour, very rarely white or piebald, and by disproportionably short, thick heads and small ture, generally betray their extra-European bree The mules are here more handsomely made mals than the horses: they are commonly e in size to the European horse; their colours black, brown, fallow, or striped like a zebra. T are preferable to the horses, especially on journeys, because they can better endure hu

and thirst, and carry with greater security heavier burdens." *

It was from Porto Feliz that the Paulistas set out upon their first expedition to explore the interior in search of gold. Ascending the Tieté to the Parana, they passed from that into the Rio Pardo, and traced it up to one of its principal sources, the waters of the Sanguexuga. Exploring the country, they passed the limit of the waters of the Serra de Camapuâo, reached the sources of the Embotatay, which they descended till they entered at last the broad stream of the Paraguay. Following this route, Antonio Pires de Campos, in 1718, discovered the gold mines of Cuiaba, in Matto Grosso. The villages which soon sprang up in this new El Dorado, were long absolutely dependent on St Paulo for the supply of the necessaries of life, nothing being attended to by the colonists but gold-washing; and, as the way down the Tieté was the only one known, all commodities were conveyed by it into the interior. In the year 1736, a way by land was first opened from Goyaz. In 1742, a communication was ascertained between Cuiaba and Para by means of the Amazons river and its tributaries. It was many years later that the way by land became more used, and that the tedious and dangerous navigation of the Tieté was gradually abandoned. At present, not more than from six to ten boats go annually from Porto Feliz to Cuiaba. Though the mouth of the Tieté is only five-and-forty leagues distant, in a straight line, the boatmen estimate the route they are obliged to take at 130 leagues. The river is full of violent currents, rocks, and waterfalls, thirteen of which cannot be passed without landing half the cargo, and still

* Von Spix, vol. ii. pp. 80—84.

greater obstacles have afterwards to be surmounted in pursuing this intricate navigation.

Hitu or Ytu, the chief town of the comarca to which it gives name, is six leagues N.W. of Sorocaba.* Except two small hamlets of inconsiderable houses, in a beautiful and flowery plain, there are scarcely any traces of cultivation in the intermediate route. The town is situated at the foot of the hills, and is excessively hot in the summer months: it consists of several rows of small, regularly-built houses of taipa, and contains, for its size, rather more than the usual complement of religious edifices; a church of our Lady, a Franciscan convent, an *hospicio* of slippered Carmelites, an hospital and hermitage of Lazarists, and several others. Some of the streets are paved with large slabs of a bluish grey, compact lime-stone. The soil in the neighbourhood is said to be peculiarly adapted to the culture of the sugar-cane.

From this town, there is a high road to Villa Rica, in Minas Geraes: the route is described by Dr Von Spix, who, with his companions, performed the journey in just a month: we shall pursue them to the frontier. Soon after crossing the wooden bridge over the Tiet , the road ascends the mountains, and passes through a savage and solitary tract of country. The first night, they reached some miserable huts called Jacar : the next day brought them to the small villa of Jundiahi, (so named from the *jundia* fish with which the stream abounds,) distant, according to Cazal, 35 miles E.N.E. of Hitu, and the same distance N.N.W. of St Paulo. All the *tropas* (caravans) proceeding from St Paulo to Minas, Goyaz, and Matto Grosso, are here "organ-

* According to Dr Von Spix. Mr Henderson says (following Cazal), 25 miles N.N.E. of Sorocaba, 60 W.N.W. of St Paulo, and two from the large fall of the Tiet , from which its name is derived.

Along the coast, it is for the most part mountainous. Inland, there are said to extend beautiful and valuable campos. Mr Mawe, who sailed along the coast, speaks of these elevated plains, apparently from the information he received, as "the finest district in the country, and indeed, one of the finest in the world in point of climate. The ridge of mountains (on the coast) is," he says, "more than 4000 feet above the level of the sea; and there is a regular ascent for twenty leagues from their inland base to Coritiba (Curitiba). On this fertile tract are fed large herds of cattle: here also are bred mules in great numbers. Its soil and air are so genial, that olives, grapes, apples, peaches, and other fruits, grow to as rich a maturity as in Europe, though they are here almost in a wild state." This is not quite accurate, as neither the vine nor the olive has yet been naturalised. It is probably more correct, that "from its great elevation, the climate of Coritiva is peculiarly congenial to Europeans." "Coritiva," adds Mr Mawe, "is not reported to contain gold or diamonds, yet, both these valuable products are found in some parts of the district; a fact known to but few persons, who have profited greatly by keeping it secret. This fine country, therefore, offers few attractions to the great mass of emigrants to Brazil, who are commonly tempted by the very name of gold mines to settle in them, or are allured by the profits accruing from plantations of cotton, sugar, or coffee, and look with indifference on the pursuits of what is termed common agriculture." The Rio Tibagy, which has its source to the west of Cannanea, running to the N.W., and traversing the campos of Guarapuaba, is stated by this traveller to be rich in diamonds, "as the few good families in its vicinity have reason to remember with gratitude; and the Rio Verde" (which we do not find mentioned by Henderson) produces, he says, gold. "More to the westward, it is dangerous to travel, since in

that direction live the Anthropophagi, who were driven from these boundaries a few years ago." * Curitiba, the head town, and the residence of the *ouvidor*, is stated to have a magnificent church; all its structures are of stone or brick, and the streets are paved. Paranagua, which, prior to 1812, was the seat of the provincial magistracy, is also built of stone, but is described as an unpleasant and unhealthy place. It is about ten miles distant from the sea, upon the southern bank of the river from which it borrows its name. The other villas of this comarca are, Villa Nova de St Luiz (or Guaratuba), seven miles from the sea; Antonio, ten miles W. of Paranagua, at the extremity of the bay, created a town in 1800; Cannanea, situated on a small island, about ten miles within the bar of the river of the same name;† Iguape; Castro; St Joze; Lages, otherwise Nossa Senhora dos Prazeres, the most southern town in the province, and much infested by the savages; and Villa do Principe, originally St Antonio do Lapa. Curitibi (properly Curitiba), the name of this district, derived from *curu*, pine, and *tiba*, many, has originated in the extensive pine forests which are found here; the cedar also is said to be common in many parts. These forests abound with the mountain-hog, herds of which may be met with, to the number, sometimes, of a hundred or more. The fruit-trees of Europe, the fig, the pear, the apple, the peach, the plum, the quince, the cherry, the walnut, and the chestnut, are all found to prosper in the southern part of the province. The olive blossoms, but is rarely known to fructify. Grapes are produced in bunches sometimes

* Mawe's Travels, pp. 73—76.

† "At the entrance of the bay of Cannanea, there is a stone of European marble with the royal arms of Portugal, which, although much defaced, is ascertained to have been erected there in the year 1503."—*Henderson's Brazil*, p. 177. To this work we are indebted for the above details.

of five pounds weight, but hitherto no good wine has been manufactured. The Curitibanoes pass for the most robust people among the Paulistas. They are employed chiefly in breeding cattle, horses, and mules, but cultivate wheat, maize, and a little rice and make some butter and cheese. Mandioc, the banana, coffee, cotton, and the sugar-cane, prosper only in certain situations.

The river Sahy Grande, dividing this province from St Catharine, forms the limit of its coast toward the south. Eighteen miles to the northward is the mouth of the rapid Guaratuba; so named from the beautiful bird, the guara, which abounds upon its margin, and breeds upon a flat island, covered with mangroves, about seven miles from the sea, where by a decree, all persons are prohibited from destroying them.* Launches proceed up this river to S Luiz. Twenty miles further northward, are the three entrances to the bay of Paranagua, formed by the two islands Mel and Pecas. The bay is twenty miles from east to west, more than ten at its greatest width but of very irregular form. A great number of small streams discharge into it. It encloses an island named Cotinga, six miles long; but small craft only can enter it. Twenty-five miles further, the shallow Araripira disembogues, scarcely affording depth of water enough for canoes. Twelve miles to the north-east is the bar of Cannanea, with a small island of the same name near its northern point; and in front of it, on the southern side, that of Figueira. What is called the bar of Cannanea is, in fact, the southern

* "The Guara, one of the handsomest birds that frequent the morasses, has the body similar to a partridge, a long neck and legs, the bill long and a little curved, and without a tail. The first feathers are white; after a short time they turn black, and finally scarlet, preserving the second colour at the extremity of the wings."—*Henderson*, p. 511.

mouth of an inlet of the sea, of which the bar of Icapara, forty miles further north-east, is the northern mouth. The intervening land is a flat island of inconsiderable width, hitherto unnamed and thinly inhabited: the channel which separates it from the continent, is narrow and deep. Smacks enter by the southern bar: the other, though of the same depth, is not navigated, owing to its dangerous windings. Fifteen miles further along the coast is the mouth of the Iguape, which is navigable for many leagues. Thirty-five miles further are the two mouths of the river Una, up which canoes proceed more than fifty miles to a place called Prelado. Forty miles to the north-east is the entrance of the handsome bay of the Itanhaen, on the northern margin of which is a small place of the same name, created a town in 1561: some farinha, rice, and timber are exported from this place, which has a Franciscan convent. It belongs to the comarca of St Paulo. The bay of Santos, already described, follows at a distance of thirty-five miles. It is the only port of the province capable of receiving large vessels.

Pursuing our plan of tracing the coast, before we explore the back country, the next maritime province, southward, is that of

SANTA CATHARINA.

This province, formerly a portion of St Paulo, from which it was separated when the latter received the addition of a part of St Amaro and St Vincente, is the smallest in Brazil. It comprehends the island from which it takes its name, and a territory of sixty leagues in length from north to south on the neighbouring continent, reckoning from the Sahy Grande, which separates it from St Paulo on the north to the Mampituba, which divides it from Rio Grande on

the south. On the west, the bends of the Cu
divide it from the same provinces; its greatest
not exceeding twenty leagues. The greater
the old captaincies of St Amaro is included within
limits, which extend from 25° 50' to 29° 20'
latitude.

A period of one hundred and twenty years
from the time that Brazil was first distributed
captaincies, before any colonists were establis
the island of St Catharina, which then bore the
of *Ilha dos Patos*. In 1654, King John IV.
ed it to Francisco Diaz Velho: but, soon af
arrival, he was assassinated by an English pira
the island remained in its primitive state. Even
the province was colonised by families fro
Azores, at the cost of the crown, from whi
greater part of the present population are desc
Negroes are not numerous, and mestizoes sti
so. The aboriginal Patoes retreated into the
tains of the continent.

"The island of St Catharina," Mr Southey
"was, in the year 1712, still covered with eve
woods, except in the little bays and creeks oppo
main-land, where some fourteen or fifteen spo
been cleared round the habitations of the s
These colonists were chiefly bad subjects, wh
fled from other captaincies, and were described
Portuguese officer, as a people that knew no
With such people, the Portuguese governme
always dealt politicly; contenting itself with the
est recognition of its authority at first, and gra
assuming and exerting power as they became
numerous, fell naturally into the habits of regul
and consequently felt the necessity of subordi
At that time, a captain had the nominal com
who was appointed by the commander of Lagu
little town on the continent, some few leagues
south. There were within his jurisdiction, on

dred and forty-seven whites, a few blacks and a few Indians, some of whom were prisoners taken in war, and treated as slaves, and others came voluntarily to better their condition by living with the Portuguese. The ordinary dress consisted of only a shirt and trowsers: he who added a hat, a jacket and a hat, was a magnificent person. Shoes and stockings were seldom seen: but when they went out the women put on leggings, made of jaguar-skin in one whole piece, transferred from the legs of the wild beast to their own. The jaguars of this isle were so numerous, even upon the island, that a great many dogs were kept to protect the houses. During some thirty years, foreign ships were well entertained there: the inhabitants allowed them to say in wood and water, and gladly supplied them with provisions, in exchange for European goods. Money they would not receive in payment, because they had no use for it. But when Commodore Anson touched there, in 1741, the place having become of more consequence, and the authority of the government being increased in proportion, the intendancy system, established in other parts of Brazil, has been introduced there also. A great contraband trade was then carried on from this island with the Plata, the Portuguese exchanging gold for silver, by which traffic both sovereigns were defrauded of their fifths. Fortifications were then being erected. In 1749, the population of St Catharina had increased to four thousand one hundred and ninety-seven; but, about the end of the century, several thousands were carried off by a contagious disease, which appears to have been dysentery, attended with putrid fever."

In 1796, this province was computed to contain 4246 *fogos* (houses), and 25,865 adult inhabitants exclusive of paid troops. In 1812, the population, according to Cazal,—amounted to 31,530. The province has three towns.—Nossa Senhora do Desterro on the island of St Catharina, St Francisco on the island

of the same name, and Laguna on the continent seven freguezias or parishes,—three on the islan four on the continent. The whole are included in the sea of Rio de Janeiro.

Mr Mawe touched at St Catherine's in his v from Monte Video to Santos in Sept 1807. H ed on the 11th; on the 29th, he made the isl sunrise, and was delighted with the grand and pic que aspect of its conical rocks rising abruptly fro sea, with the lofty, wooded mountains of the con in the back ground. "This sublime scenery int ed us," he says, "the more from the contrast it ed to the extensive, woodless plains of Buenos A He makes the island to be situated in lat 2 south.

"Entering the port of St Catherine's by the n he continues, "we passed several islands, on which, westward of the entrance, stands the re able port of Santa Cruz. After running a few in shoal water, we sailed into a narrow passage, ed by two forts, which form the harbour. Fro anchorage, and more particularly from the la place, which is at the bottom of a verdant sl about five hundred yards, the town has a most b ful appearance, and the perspective is nobly cr by its fine cathedral. The green is interspersed orange-trees, and forms an agreeable parade. I diately on entering the town, we discerned in i neral appearance, and in the manners of its in ants, a striking superiority over those which we late visited. The houses are well built, have three stories, with boarded floors, and are pr with neat gardens, well stocked with excellent v bles and flowers. The town consists of several s and may contain from 5 to 6000 inhabitants. free port." Besides the church of Nossa Senh Desterro, which gives name to the capital, it co two chapels, a convent, an hospicio, and goo

ticks. "The houses," Cazal says, "are either of stone or wood. The senate is presided by a *juiz de fora*, and the youth are instructed by royal masters in the primitive letters and Latin, for whose benefit there is a tribute in rum!" The inhabitants manufacture coarse linen* and cotton goods, and a cloth consisting of a mixture of both. The excellent red clay which the island affords, is also manufactured into jars, large water-pots, and culinary vessels, large quantities of which are exported both to Rio and to the Plata. "The trade of this place, however," Mr Mawe says, "is inconsiderable, as the produce does not much exceed the consumption of the inhabitants, who are in general far from rich. It affords an agreeable retirement to merchants who have discontinued business, masters of ships who have left off going to sea, and other persons, who, having secured an independence, seeks only leisure to enjoy it. Few places are better calculated for such a purpose than this; it is enlivened by the numerous coasting-vessels from Bahia, Pernambuco, and other ports, bound for the Plata, which frequently touch here; and it is amply provided with artisans of all descriptions, such as tailors, shoemakers, tin-workers, joiners, and smiths. The inhabitants in general are very civil and courteous to strangers. The ladies are handsome and very lively: their chief employment is making lace, in which they display great ingenuity and taste."

Mr Luccock gives a less pleasing account of the state of society here. "The island enjoys," he says, "a very agreeable climate, and is accounted a cheap place of residence. On this account, an English family, with straitened finances, settled here; but, though attaining their first object, they were, on the whole, miserably disappointed. There are none of

* "Flax is grown here of a very fair quality, of which the fishermen make their lines, nets, and cordage."

the most common accommodations. The habits of the people are disgustingly filthy, and their morals depraved. The opportunities and means of commerce were also at that period few, but have since become more abundant."*

All accounts, however, seem to agree as to the natural advantages of the island, and the desirableness of the station for a colony. The surface is singularly varied, presenting granite mountains, fertile plains, swamps fit for the growth of rice, lakes stocked with fish, and several small streams. Yet, the whole island is not much more than thirty miles in length from north to south, and from four to eight in width. One of the lakes, on the eastern side of the island, is two leagues in length. Mandioc and flax are the principal articles of agriculture, the sandy soil near the coast being adapted to the former of these; but wheat, as well as maize, is also grown here, and pulse in every part. Onions are abundant, and have credit for singular excellence. There are also plantations of rice, sugar, and cotton, but the latter is of indifferent quality. To these productions are to be added indigo, water-melons, pine-apples, and, according to Mr Mawe, "the finest oranges in the world."† "On contemplating the many natural advantages of this island," adds this traveller, "I could not but be struck with its importance, and was tempted to wish that it were annexed by treaty to the dominions of Great Britain. Emigrants might subsist here at a very cheap rate, and the isle is tenable against any force so long as we remain masters of the sea. Ships would trade to it from the western coast of America, and from the eastern coast of Africa; and in our hands,

* Notes, &c. p. 240.

† Mr Luccock says: "They are chiefly of the small red kind called Tangerinas, and though, beyond this point to the south, they do not flourish, are well flavoured."

it would soon become an emporium of commerce. It is adapted to almost every variety of produce; the highlands are capable of cultivation, and the plains and valleys are fertile even to luxuriance. The climate is humid, but its general temperature is moderate and salubrious. If colonized by English, the isle might be a perfect Paradise." A report, it seems, at one time prevailed, and was very popular, that this island was to be ceded to the crown of Great Britain. By the treaty of 1810, it was, however, declared a free port to our trade, in which British merchants might settle and practise their religion without molestation.* When, in addition to the advantages which have been enumerated, it is considered, that the harbour is the best in Brazil, except only that of Rio de Janeiro,† it is remarkable that St Catherine's should hitherto have been more neglected by the government than almost any other maritime part of Brazil, while it has always been a common resort of strangers of all nations.‡

On the continent, opposite Desterro, (Mr Henderson says four miles south-east of the capital,) stands the pleasant village of S. Joze, the inhabitants of which are stated by Mr Mawe to be principally occupied in sawing timber into planks, making bricks, and growing rice. There is also a pottery here of glazed

* See page 57.

† Mr Henderson terms it "one of the best in South America, and the key to the Southern Ocean."

‡ So low was the value of land here in 1808, and so valuable money, that Mr Mawe was offered an estate occupying a space of eighty-five fathoms along the beach, near St Jose, and extending a mile inland, including a neat house and garden, orangeries, and well-watered-plantations, for about 125*l* sterling. About two miles from Desterro, a neat house with a small orangery and some cleared ground, was offered for sale at 100 dollars; and an excellent house in one of the best situations in the environs, with a garden of two acres tastefully planted, was offered for 400*l* sterling.

earthen-ware. "Near this village," he says, "is a lovely vale called Picada, thickly studded with white cottages embosomed in orange-groves and coffee-plantations. The gently sloping hills which enclose this spot, give a picturesque effect to the bold, rugged scenery beyond them. Proceeding northwards from St Jose, we entered some fine bays, the shores of which were studded with houses, pleasantly situated, amid bananerias, orangeries, and plantations of rice, coffee, and mandioca. After having passed several well-peopled parishes, we arrived at Armação a village at the extremity of a bay" (that of St Miguel), "about nine leagues distant from St Jose, and four leagues north of Santa Cruz.* This village is a fishing station for whales, which were formerly very numerous on the coast, and in the bays that indent it. The fishery is farmed by Government to a company under the superintendence of a *capitam-mor* and a number of inferior officers. About 150 negroes are employed on this station, but the number of whales now caught, is not so great as formerly, when the average was three or or four hundred in a season.† Their conveniences for flinching or cutting up the fish, are extensive and well contrived. Several fine piers project from the shore into eighteen or twenty feet depth of water, on which are erected capstans, cranes, and other requisite machinery. Hither all the fish on the coast are brought. The boiling-house, tanks, &c. are far superior to any thing of the kind at Greenland Dock, and indeed, to all similar establishments in Europe. To give an idea of their magnitude, it is sufficient to say, that, in one range, there are twenty-seven very large boilers, and places for three more. Their tanks are

* The "pleasant parish of St Miguel," situated on the bay so called, which forms a good road-stead, is stated by Mr Henderson to be but eight miles north-west of Desterro.

† "Forty years ago, they caught a whale a day, but they now (1808) catch only one in the course of a month."

vast vaults, on some of which a boat might be rowed with ease. We obtained a view of those great works through the civility of the commander of the place, Capitam Mor Jacinto Jorge dos Anjos, who lived there in a princely style, and possesses a very considerable property, which he diffuses with great public spirit and liberality."

Beyond the point of Armaçâo, is that of Dos Ganchos, forming the southern extremity of the spacious bay of Tejuco or Tejucas, into which a river of the same name discharges itself, fifty fathoms wide, and "affording two days' navigation."* Mr Mawe crossed by a mountainous road of four leagues, the peninsula which forms the southern point of the bay. "The poor cottages of the people here," he says, present a curious picture of rural irregularity. Some are built on the summit of conical mountains, the passage to which is frequently obstructed by clouds; others stand on the sides of gentle acclivities; but the greater number of them are situated almost in contact with the ocean, which often flows to their very doors. The bay is from two or three leagues across, and extends about the same distance inland. It is well sheltered, and affords good anchorage, and fine situations for loading timber, with which the mountainous country around is thickly clothed, and large quantities of which are felled and embarked for Rio de Janeiro and the Plata. Canoes are made here at a cheaper rate and in greater numbers than in any other part of Brazil. Into this bay fall several streams, formed by the mountain torrents and springs, and two tolerable rivers, the less called Inferninho, and the larger Tigreno.† They both flow through low, swampy land, subject to inundation, and overgrown with man-

* Henderson.

† Neither of these is mentioned by Henderson.

groves and an immense variety of trees. The insalubrity of this tract might be corrected by clearing away the underwood and draining the soil; but the arduousness of such an undertaking might deter a more active and skilful people than this. In the rainy season, it is inundated to a great extent; and in summer, it is infested with terrible swarms of mosquitoes and burachala flies, which render it almost uninhabitable.

"Along the beach of this bay, I found the shell of the *murex* genus, which produces that beautiful crimson dye so valued by the ancients. It is here called *purpura*, and to my great surprise, its use is in some degree known to the natives, one of whom shewed me some cotton fringe dyed with an extract of it, though ill prepared. The shell is about the size of a common whelk, and contains a fish on whose body appears a vesicle, full of a pale yellow, viscid, purulent substance, which constitutes the dye. The mode of extracting it is, to break the shell carefully with a hammer, so as not to crush the fish, and then to let out the liquor in the vesicle with a lancet or other sharp instrument. I used, for greater convenience, a pen, and wrote my initials, &c. on a handkerchief: the marks, in half an hour after, were of a dirty green colour, and, on being exposed to the air a few hours longer, changed to a rich crimson. The quantity produced by each is very small, but quite sufficient for such an experiment. The best time for making it is when the animal is in a state of incipient putrescency. I have no doubt that, if a sufficient quantity of them were taken, and the dyeing matter, when extracted, were liquefied in a small degree with gum-water, a valuable article of commerce might be produced. The liquid is a perfect substantive dye, and of course resists the action of alkalies.

"Ten leagues north of this place is the fine capacious harbour of Guaroupas, with its handsome town.

The anchorage is equally good as in that of Dos Ganchos (or Tejucas). This bay, as far as I could observe during my short visit to it, presents to the view a greater diversity of hills, valleys, and plain, than the one above-mentioned. Both are esteemed fine fishing-ground during the whale season, which is from December to June.

"From hence northward is the fine harbour of San Francisco in the bay of the same name. It has three entrances, defended by forts; that to the south is most frequented. The land here is very flat for several miles, and the rivers which intersect it, are navigable for canoes as far as the base of the great chain of mountains, where a public road, begun with incredible labour and expense, leads over that almost impassable barrier. This road will soon be a work of national importance to Brazil, as through it, the finest district in that country, and indeed, one of the finest in the world in point of climate, the rich plain of Coritiva (Curitiba) will be connected with the ocean. The chain of mountains which bounds that plain, is washed at the base by a lagoon, communicating in a direct line with the harbour of San Francisco, where many merchant-ships have been constructed of the finest timber. The chief occupations of the inhabitants are the cutting of timber and other labours connected with ship-building. Vessels of large dimensions, and a number of small craft for coasters, have been built here by merchants of Rio de Janeiro, Bahia, and Pernambuco. When this trade is brisk, there is a great demand for the various classes of artisans whom it requires, and many negroes are employed. The wood used is so strong, and holds the iron so firmly, that ships built of it endure many years, and are in greater esteem with the Portuguese and Spaniards than those built in Europe. On this account, the harbour of San Francisco is likely to become of considerable value to Brazil; and as it is

connected with Corkiva, the cattle of which have been found superior to those of Rio Grande; there is every probability that, at no distant period, the Portuguese navy will be here supplied with salt provisions. This must, however, depend on the completion of the great road over the mountains. Towards the north there are woods of fine large pines, exceedingly large, tough, and full of resin. They constitute a singular variety of the genus *pinus*. The boughs branch out from the upper part of the tree only, and have tufts of leaves at each extremity. A tree eighty feet high, for instance, will appear without branches to the height of above fifty-five feet: the branches there extend horizontally in every direction, with leaves at their extremities, the lowest and largest to a distance of fourteen or fifteen feet from the stem, and the higher ones gradually diminishing in length towards the top, which ends in a tuft of leaves as a crown to the whole. These trees are very picturesque, indeed beautiful: they grow to a sufficient size to serve as masts for ships of two or three hundred tons. I was told there were much larger ones to be found."*

It is not quite easy to reconcile with this description of the coast, the account which we find given by Mr Henderson, on the authority of Padre Cazal. To the north of the bay of Guaroupas, three leagues beyond the small river Cambory-guassu, is the embouchure of "the great river Tajahy," which is stated to be the only river met with on the road from Portalagre to St Paulo, that flows towards the east. At the passage a short distance from the beach, it is "little less than sixty fathoms in width." "The *sumacas* proceed up it only three miles: launches and large canoes navigate freely as far as the first fall. About a 120 yards above, it becomes navigable for three days by towing, and as many more with the oar,

* Mawe's Travels, pp. 68—82.

to the next cataract. It rises between the Rio Negro and the Correntes, which run to the westward. Five miles further to the north is the river Gravata, otherwise Iriri-guassu, thirty fathoms wide, and navigable for canoes. It is followed by the *spacious bay of Itapacoroya*, where there is an establishment for whale-fishing. Three leagues to the north, the river Itapicu disembogues, being fifty fathoms wide and of considerable depth. Its origin is far back in the province, and affords navigation to small canoes for many leagues without the interruption of more than one cataract, which is situated ten miles above the mouth. The agitated state of the sea at the mouth of this river, does not permit the entrance of any description of vessel. Immediately beyond the bar, it forms a lake called Lagoa da Cruz, two leagues long from north to south, parallel with the beach, and very narrow. Among the rivers which enlarge it are remarked, the Piranga, which is received by the left bank, and is navigable by canoes for five leagues; the Upitanga, which joins it by the right margin, and is navigable for only six miles; the Itapicumirim, that comes from the N.W., and admits of navigation for about fifteen miles; the Jaragua, which flows from the S.W., and appears capable of allowing small vessels to proceed as far as a situation about four leagues above its mouth; and the Braço, which descends from the N.W., and admits of canoes for the space of six miles. All these rivers run by winding courses among mountains and uncultivated territories thickly wooded, demonstrating the natural fertility of the soil. The Itapicu is supposed to be the river of Dragons, which the discoverers placed to the south of the river St Francisco in this district. Five miles to the north of Itapicu is the island of St Francisco, six leagues long, and in the form of a bow, the right line of which is nearest the coast.

The channel which separates it from the continent, is improperly called the river of St Francisco. The southern entrance, denominated Aracary is 200 fathoms wide, and has only depth for large boats; on its outside are the three islands of Remedios, and two of Tamborotes. The northern bar, called Babitonga, is 1500 fathoms wide, and deep enough for large *sumacas*.* At the end of the sixteenth century, it was not known that the land between the bars of Aracary and Babitonga is a island; they were thought to be two mighty rivers, the southern called the St Francisco, and the northern the Alagado. The channel, (the supposed river of St Francisco,) of a semicircular form, enlarges considerably from both mouths to the middle, where it is three miles wide, and contains a cluster of more than twenty islands. A great number of rivers empty themselves here. The island of St Francisco is low, watered with various small rivers, and inhabited. On its eastern side there is a narrow lake, ten miles long from north to south, denominated the river Acarahy, and near it another small one. Two leagues north of the bar of Babitonga is the river Sahy Mirim, and the same distance further, the Sahy Grande, both inconsiderable, uniting in one stream a little above their embouchures."† This is the river which has already been mentioned as the northern boundary of the province, dividing it from St Paulo.

These minute and not very interesting topographical details are inserted here, because the part of the coast to which they relate, has hitherto received little attention from modern travellers, and may be considered as almost unknown country. If the bar of Babitonga be, as we imagine, Mr Mawe's harbour of St Francisco, he has taken no notice of the bay of Itapacoroya. The lagoon he speaks of as washing

* *Sumacas* are from ten to nearly two hundred tons burden.
† Henderson's Brazil, pp. 155, 6.

the base of the cordillera, is, probably, the Lagoa da Cruz. The "great river Tajahy" would seem to deserve being explored. The port of St Francisco appears to want depth of water for large vessels, a circumstance materially affecting its value. Along this whole tract of coast, north of St Miguel, there does not appear to be a single town or parish. The land bordering on the bay of Tejuccas according to Mr Mawe, was thought of so little value, that any one might take as much as he pleased of what was unappropriated, provided he made a proper application for it to the Government. The plain is stated by Mr Henderson to be marshy in winter.

The town of St Francisco, situated on the island to which it gives name about ten miles within the bar of Babitonga, consists of houses mostly built of earth, and a stone church dedicated to Nossa Senhora da Graça. Only two streets are paved. The inhabitants are almost all whites, and are remarked to be of very pale complexion: they are chiefly occupied in the cultivation of mandioc, and as the town is said to be well supplied with fish, their *maigre* diet may possibly account for their cadaverous appearance. The country adjacent, however, though rich, is said to be swampy, and of course unhealthy.*

The only place in the province, on the continent, that is dignified with the name of a town, is Laguna, prettily situated upon the eastern margin of the lake from which it derives its name, two miles from the bar, and sixty miles south of Desterro.† It has three

* It is singular that Mr Luccock, from whom we transcribe this last remark, should speak of the St Francisco as the only considerable river in the province, adopting the erroneous notion respecting the channel, and taking no notice of the Tajahy.

† Here we follow Cazal. Mr Luccock terms the *lake* a *bay*. *Lagoa* certainly means lake, but the discrepancy is explained by supposing that, like *Lagoa Feia* and some

parallel streets, crossed by others, and a square at one side, in which the court-house is situated. A great part of the houses are of stone. It has only one church, dedicated to St Antonio dos Anjos, and, for a Brazilian town, appears to be singularly destitute of religious establishments. "From its port," says Mr Henderson, "which receives coasting-vessels, are exported farinha, rice, Indian corn, timber, and salt fish." In the months of November and December particularly, a prodigious quantity of a long fish with a forked tail, called *bagre*, enter the lake, supplying a lucrative branch of commerce. At a small distance inland is the *Morro* of Santa Maria (in some charts written Santa Martha), "the last abutment of the mountains, at their southern limit, which extends to the sea. A little beyond it is the great eastern Serro skirting the ocean." Fifteen miles north of Laguna, and nearly fifty south of the capital, is Villa Nova or St Anna, situated on an elevation near the northern extremity of the same lake: it is a small place, the houses generally of wood. More flax is cultivated and manufactured here than in any other part of the province. Thirty-five miles to the north of this parish, and ten south of the capital, is that of Nossa Senhora do Rozario, a mere village, situated on the bay of Brito. In this district there are hot springs, the same, probably, that Mr Luccock refers to as reported to resemble the waters of Harrowgate, with the addition of considerable warmth. They are found, he says, on the banks of the Cubatam. "Swamps render the road to the spot very bad; and the abso-

others which have been described, it is a bay in the rainy season, a lake when the bar is dry. The distance to St Catherine's, he says, is ninety miles, but he means *by land*. The route leads along "a mountainous and woody road, through a country abounding in wild beasts, and occupied by Indians hardly less savage."—*Notes*, &c. p. 238.

lute want of every convenience for invalids, prevents their receiving any advantage from this salutary provision of nature." The time may not, however, be very distant, when this unknown, unvisited spot shall attract around it a *villæ nova*, to which not only the Vincentistas and Paulistas, but the more polished Caryocas of Rio may repair as to the Spa of Brazil.

The next province, the most southern in the empire, is that of

RIO GRANDE DO SUL,

Bounded on the north by Sta Catharina and St Paulo; on the west, by the river Uruguay, which separates it from the province of that name; on the south, by the river Plata; and on the east, by the Atlantic: it is upwards of 500 miles long and 400 wide, lying between lat 28° and 35° S., and enjoys a temperate and salubrious climate. This extensive province has only since 1800 enjoyed a local government, being up to that time considered as a dependency on that of Rio; and it is still, we believe, included, ecclesiastically, within its episcopal see. The southern part has always, till very lately, been the theatre of perpetual contention between the Portuguese and the Spaniards of Buenos Ayres, owing to the constant infraction of the various treaties of demarcation by which it had been attempted to settle their respective boundaries. When Mr Luccock was in Brazil (A.D. 1809—1813), the country south of the river Piratinim, watered by the Ygaroon, was still held by the Spaniards, though claimed by the Portuguese. "Whenever the question of yielding it up was started afresh, there was never any want of difficulties to impede the determination. Both parties had the wisdom, in the mean time, to carry on a considerable commercial intercourse with the Rio

tribution of the ...
was its colonisation accomplished ...
seca or his brother John Correa de Sa, to w
ter II. granted extensive lands in the territory
nated St Gabriel, adjacent to the Plata.
the end of the sixteenth, or the beginning of
venteenth century, some Vincentistas (inhab
St Vincente, first removed to the vicinity of
goa dos Patos; and their descendants extend
selves to the south and west, as the Indians
retired. The capitanias of the De Sousa's† c
be enlarged beyond their prescribed limits,
standing the districts south of St Amaro we
luta, or without donatories; yet, the first sett
always considered as their people, and k
Vincentistas and Paulistas, till these distri
erected into a province.‡ During the six
that Portugal was subject to the court of Ca
rious Spanish colonies established themselve
vicinity of the river Uruguay. To check the
sion eastward, the Colonia do Sacramento w
ed by the government of Rio in 1680. Scar
seven months elapsed, when the new settle
surprised and taken by the Spanish governo
nos Ayres, the capture being attended b
... of much barbarity. It was resto

1735, it was again attacked by the governor of Buenos Ayres; but this time the Portuguese garrison defended themselves with so much resolution and effect, that though reduced to the necessity of eating dogs, cats, and rats, they maintained the contest till the arrival of succours, which compelled the assailants to raise the siege. The territorial convention of 1750 once more gave up the colony of Sacramento to the Spaniards. In 1761 the treaty of limits was annulled, and Colonia restored to Portugal. It was retaken by the governor of Buenos Ayres the year following; was restored at the conclusion of a treaty of peace the next year; was again ceded to the Spaniards in 1777, in exchange for the island of Sta Catharina, which they had treacherously seized, and remained in their possession till it was taken by the British forces under Sir Samuel Auchmuty in 1804. The event of the latter expedition against Buenos Ayres, restored it to the Spaniards: but at length, they have been compelled to resign their possessions on that side of the Plata, and the whole province has been finally incorporated with the empire of Brazil.

Up to the year 1763, the provincial capital was St Pedro do Sul, commonly called Rio Grande from its harbour, which forms the entrance to the Lagoa dos Patos, and is improperly termed a river. The town was begun a league to the south-west, in the situation called Estreito, near the head of the bay: it stood on a bank about twenty feet high, and was surrounded with a parapet of sods as a barrier against the encroaching sand. Yet, by a slow, but sure progress, it appears to have gained ground so as almost to have

* See p. 47.

† Though Colonia was then given up, Rio Grande (St Pedro) and some other garrisons remained under the dominion of Spain till 1777, when they were restored in exchange for the reductions of Paraguay. See p. 55, *note*.

overwhelmed the town, and to have occasioned the removal of the inhabitants between the years 1747 and 1750. "Notwithstanding the buried state of the few ruins that remain, its form and extent," says Mr Luccock, "may be made out. It was small, and the buildings were slightly constructed; and its want of importance may be concluded from the probability that it had no church, as not the smallest traces of such an edifice are to be discovered."* This supposition however, is inadmissible: the church may have been pulled down, if it is not overwhelmed by sand; but a town without a church never, we may be assured, existed in Brazil. When St Pedro was taken by the Spaniards in 1762, the village of Nossa Senhora de Conceiçao became the capital, under the name, given to it by the governor, of Portalegre. In 1808, it received the title of a town, and is now the chief place in the province, where reside all the principal authorities, civil, ecclesiastical, and military. St Pedro, however, though dependent on Portalegre, derives from its situation on the coast, a permanent importance. Here, all vessels are required to deliver their papers, large ships seldom proceeding higher; and here, the principal merchants or their agents reside; so that, at the time of Mr Luccock's residence, it was the great mart of southern Brazil.

On approaching the coast from the south, land is first made in the neighbourhood of Estreito, about nine leagues to the N.E. of the bar of the Rio Grande. Mr Luccock thus describes the aspect of the coast. "Little round hillocks of sand, without the slightest degree of vegetation, seemed to rise out of the water, to which a splendid sun communicated a dazzling whiteness. Soon it appeared, that these were only inequalities of a sandy shore, from the midst of which arose the church of Estreito,† a small building, in the

* Luccock's Notes, p. 129.

† Cazal says, the site of the old town of St Pedro was called Estreito; but there appear to be two places so denominated.

usual style of such edifices in the villages of Brazil. A few trees and a scanty portion of verdure about it, now becoming visible, served to increase the forbidding appearance of the surrounding desert. Long before we saw any marks by which to guide our course, we were in shoal water and encompassed with sand-banks. We entered the river between a bluff head to our left, and a long, low, sandy point to the east, through a passage about half a mile wide, guarded by a few miserable erections called forts and batteries. Just within the passage lie the vessels which have received their lading, and are ready to proceed on their voyages, waiting for a sufficient depth of water on the bar. The decline of day and the tediousness of our progress rendered me impatient, and induced me to ascend the mast, hoping to look beyond the flat, dreary, desolate, and almost houseless waste immediately before our eyes. From thence, nothing was to be discovered towards the east, but loose and barren sand; westward, appeared a tract of swamps partially covered with brushwood; beyond, a broad line of water, the Bay of Mangueira; and still further, the small, white, pretty-looking town of St Pedro do Sul. The church, which the people dignify with the name of cathedral, rose in the centre of the buildings, and formed the chief feature of the view. The next morning, the vessel was brought up in a masterly style to her anchorage, close to the village of St Pedro do Norte, and three miles from the principal town, the sand-banks not permitting a nearer approach. From the entrance of the river to the anchorage, through a course of nine miles, the same obstructions prevail, leaving a narrow, intricate channel, with barely water sufficient for a deep-laden brig. About six miles up, on the left hand, is a large bay still called the Bay of Mangueira,* though little of

* This appears to be an error for *mangue*, "a small tree

that plant remains on the neighbouring swamps. I
the bay, fishes of various sorts so abound, that afte
wards, crossing it at a late hour, great numbers thre
themselves over our canoe in every direction, a
some fell into it. A little higher up is another bro
inlet, navigable for yachts of 50 tons, within which
the fertile island of Marinheiros, containing some
the highest land and the best cultivated spots in
neighbourhood. The soil is a red clay, which sh
that it was once attached to the continent, and is
older formation than the bay. It is celebrated for
production of onions; and from hence, or from tha
land of Sta Maria, the town is supplied with alm
the only drinkable water used within it. Bey
these islands, the water expands to a breadth of m
than ten miles, but is so very shallow, that the pra
cable channel, which runs near the eastern shore,
in one part, not more than a hundred yards wi
Other islands, besides those which have been m
tioned, are scattered about this expanse of water, a
communicate to it some little ornament. The d
tance from the bar to the entrance of the Lagoa d
Patos, is about thirty miles; the whole of which is
with some impropriety, called the Rio Grande, an
considered as the harbour of St Pedro. Through
this long course, the channel is hardly any where mo
than twelve feet deep, the water often declining o
the sides of it to three feet, and, in some places to a

with a smooth rind and thick and varnished leaves," which prospers only upon the sea-coast, or the margins of salt rivers; whereas the *mangueira*, or *Mangua-tree*, is described by Mr Henderson, as "a bulky tree with a leafy tuft," having a long, pointed leaf, the fruit the size of an apple, but resembling more a green-gage, green or yellow, sometimes tinged with red; when divested of the skin, which has a turpentine taste, the pulp is juicy and delicious, although unpleasantly full of fibres attached to the stone. It is a native of Asia, and prospers only in the torrid zone.

thirds of which are supposed to be white, or very slightly tinged. But some of the houses belonging to persons who reside on their estates, are seldom occupied, except at religious festivals. The principal row of houses runs east and west, enjoying from their latticed windows the prospect of an extensive flat, and bare island, across a water which is about six hundred yards over. Behind this row, which is really neat and pretty, is a street of small, low huts, constructed of mud, and covered with thatch, the habitations of the lower ranks. Here, those accumulations of sand which have already been mentioned, frequently take place; and during my continuance in St Pedro, several of the houses were nearly overwhelmed by them, and greatly injured. Were it not for this barrier, the better ones would be exposed to the same fate.

"The public buildings in St Pedro, would of themselves be hardly worthy of notice; but, a few particulars relative to them may serve to illustrate the state of the place. At their head stands the Cathedral, the plainness of which, both within and without, does not prevent it from being a handsome edifice. At each end of the front rises a square tower, finished with a small turret. The entrance is by folding doors; and over it is the orchestra, lighted by a large round window, giving some little ornament to the front: the chancel and altar face the doors. On each side, a portion of the area is railed off for male worshippers, and in the centre is the station of females. From the ground to the ridge of this church is about fifty feet, and before it the sand has accumulated to the same height; but the wind striking against the building, has caused it to recoil from the walls, and formed a sort of deep and gloomy dell, leading to the door. It has been fifty years accumulating, as old people tell us, and its elevation indicates that it must have risen about a foot

"A short new street at the eastern side of tl town, conducts to the only defence of the place, l courtesy called the Fort, far better calculated suppress an insurrection, than to keep out of an en my. It is an artificial mount of sand, its sides cove ed with sods, and on the top is a platform su rounded with a breastwork of earth, with embrasur for six guns. Here is also a signal-post, which a nounces the appearance of vessels off the Bar, an the number which may have entered the port durin the night. The guns of the Fort are brass, lon eighteen-pounders, of excellent workmanship, an ornamented with the arms of Spain. They ar mounted on carriages, which would be demolished b a first discharge, and are placed in a circle, so fa distant from the channel, as little to annoy an ap proaching enemy. The magazine is a poor mu hut at the foot of the hill, with a few balls lying abou it; but if there were powder, it would be impossibl to keep it in order in such a situation.

"Pitiful as is the chief custom-house of Brazi that of St Pedro falls as much below it as the town i inferior to the capital. It is a stone building, wit walls about ten feet high, and covered with a dee roof, giving it the appearance of an old English barn Within, two square portions are railed off, each c which is furnished with a table and forms, for th transaction of business. The insignificant remain der of space enclosed within its walls, is the onl place where goods can be deposited under the go vernment key. In front of it, close to the water, i a small tiled shed, raised upon posts over a planke floor, and furnished with a crane, which is the onl public wharf, and the place where all merchandis must be landed. At no great distance is the gao a miserable dungeon, enlightened only through a open railing in front, which at the same time expos the prisoners, and displays such wretchedness, as m

possibly have more effect on some minds than a sense of moral rectitude. The governor's house is at the west end of what has been described as the principal row of buildings; it is of one story only, like the generality of its neighbours, but distinguished from almost every other habitation in the place by an ascent to it of a few steps, and by its glazed windows. In the same row is what few of my countrymen would hesitate to call the comfortless abode of the vicar, the chief clergyman of the parish. It consists of two stories; the lower one open or appropriated to offices; the upper, entered from without by a step-ladder, contains the family apartments. The walls are whitened; the windows much like those of our hay-lofts, with shutters painted red.

"The Ferry-house, the only place where a boat is allowed to be hired, is commodiously situated near the public quay. For his exclusive privilege, the proprietor pays a rent to the crown, and is obliged to furnish and keep in order a *catraia* or launch, which, when the weather permits, must cross the water every two hours. The fare is about six-pence; and should a man wish to cross at any but the usual times, he may command a boat for a double fee, though he should be the only passenger."*

There are "two orders of devout women" at St. Pedro; that is to say, two female religious orders

* When the farmer of this ferry heard that the royal family had arrived in Brazil, he owed to the crown 300*l*. (215*l*.); he therefore mounted a horse and with the greatest secrecy, set off without passports for the capital, where on his arrival at the end of three weeks, having travelled upwards eight hundred miles by an unusual route for the sake of avoiding pursuit and detection. He threw himself at the prince-regent's feet, confessed the debt and his inability to discharge it. His royal highness was so much pleased with this mark of confidence in government, to cancel the sum and re-instate the man in his post

mighty numerous. But they have a ferocious
in the dog. The houses are generally very wr
the streets of a fine sand, the same as the ne
hood. It enters so profusely into the house
season of the high winds, that it is impossibl
any thing without a portion of sand being in
with it."

The town is properly a garrison; and the
nor had under his orders at the period refe
two regiments of the line; one belonging
Grande, about four hundred strong; the oth
sisting of about three hundred men, and
ing to St Paul's; also a body of cavalry
from the farms and a regiment of militia.
yeomen and militia were deficient in every th
numbers. They appeared in the field with
or nooses, and could certainly catch their
with more skill than they could exhibit in
of a musket. Between the two regiments
of long standing prevailed, partaking of the
antipathies between the Spaniards and Por
and dating from the occupation of the prov
the former. On one occasion, a severe affr
place; lives were lost on both sides, and it

[illegible]
the [illegible]

[illegible]
of St [illegible]
to the [illegible]
Vide. [illegible]
[illegible]
condition [illegible]
of the [illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
the [illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[

trict. Under his roof, there was a constant even
lounge for the heretics as well as the Catholics,
which lively conversation was occasionally var
by cards and dancing. Some of the inferior cle
whom we met with, appeared to be respectable m
but, if their services were really enforced by th
example, they were insufficient to prevent a gr
laxity of morals. Marriages were rare at St
dro, compared with the population, though the to
and province enjoyed, in this respect, some pri
leges not common (at this period) to the colo
In other parts, if not here also, when Brazil
decidedly considered as a Portuguese dependen
it was necessary to obtain *from Lisbon*, a lice
for the solemnization of marriage. If the sw
made any pretences to wealth or distinction, it
not unusual for him to go thither to seek it, w
voluminous testimonials of his birth, residence,
means. In the gay circles of the capital, he
unfrequently found another charmer, or perhaps,
his return, had to lament a new instance of hun
instability, his fair one having forsaken him.
did state policy unite with other causes to imp
social virtue and domestic comfort. Indeed, be
as in Rio de Janeiro, moral principles seemed
have little influence: there was the same want
fidelity, honour, and confidence. Religion frig
ened some into uprightness, and a strict police
strained and compelled greater numbers. The co
try, too, was pastoral, and uninfected with the
nia of mining. Yet, if it possessed a few mo
advantages, the great influx of strangers, and
frequent changes in society, were peculiarly hos
to its feeble virtue." *

Among the female part of society, however, th
appeared some affectionate sisters and wives; an

* Notes, &c. pp. 186, 190.

much higher degree of domestic and social happiness was witnessed here, than in most parts of the country. The elder women are described as frank and chatty; the younger ones as unusually pleasing. None of them went much abroad, though less restrained than in Rio, more regarded as companions and friends, and more freely admitted into society.

The costume of the inhabitants of Rio Grande does not appear to differ materially from that of the Paulistas; but, as connected with the state of manners, the description may not be uninteresting.

"Gentlemen wore cotton shirts, neatly made, with open work and lace at the breast, and the collar sprucely tied with a black ribbon. Their coats resembled our surtouts, in some cases adorned with loops and tassels, in others with large silver buttons; the waistcoats were made of calico, generally printed in a large running pattern; the trowsers of white cotton cloth. In the house, when perfectly at ease, the coat was often exchanged for a calico jacket, and the feet thrust into slippers. Elderly men, when dressed, wore large buckles; the younger, departing from the state of their fathers, used shoe-strings. On few occasions, and by few people, even of the highest rank, were stockings of any kind worn; and no one went out on occasions of ceremony, without a cocked hat and a dirk. If about to travel, they put on pantaloons of white cotton cloth, and drew over them long boots, fastened below the knee with a strap and buckle. In the country, and passing from one place to another, they wore broad-brimmed hats, made of plaited straw, or the leaf of the palm, and a woollen or cotton *poncho*,—a garment made of one large piece, with a hole in the middle, through which the head is thrust, and falling loosely before, behind, and over the arms. The *poncho*, if made of cloth, is fre-

quently trimmed all round with velveteen, and lin
with baize of some gay colour; if of cotton, it
ornamented with a border of various colours, wov
with the piece, and is of South American manu
facture. Ordinary working people, such as sailor
boatmen, guides, and the lower order of farmers a
peasantry, wear woollen jackets, with quarter-dolla
for buttons, in such number and order as mea
may allow, or fancy dictate. I never saw here th
poorest white peasant, who, besides these ornament
of the jacket, did not carry about him a silv
fork and spoon. This practice makes them mo
cleanly in their habits of eating, than their north
ern brethren; and one good habit usually introdu
ces others.

"Ladies appear in public in the *mantilha*,
square piece of silk, bordered with broad lac
which is fastened on the head, and falls over th
back and shoulders. They wear stockings an
showy-coloured shoes. Their head-dress is Portu
guese, adorned with flowers, and sometimes, in th
evening, with fire-flies. Females of the secon
class wear, out of their houses, a sort of great coa
called a *capota*, made of cassimere, and gaudil
trimmed with plush. Female slaves have only th
baéta, a square cloth or baize, often decorated wi
a hair-list; their hair bound with a piece of re
binding, or a Bandana handkerchief; their feet is
variably bare."

The class of persons who occasionally repair
St Pedro, as the purchasers of goods, from the in
terior, are characterized as manifesting, by a th
beard, lank hair, and an unsettled eye, some mi
ture, of Indian blood. The men of genuine Sp
nish or Portuguese origin have thick and stron
beards, the hair wavy, the visage and limbs longe
than those of mixed blood. The complexion of a
is a deep brown, with the hair and irides black

"These strangers were [illegible] a coarse and strong cotton of domestic manufacture, fastened into a shirt with open sleeves, and reaching [illegible] a little below the knee, and were fastened round the loins with a girdle. This girdle was the web of a fabric of their own [illegible] was about a span broad, dyed blue or red, in [illegible] alternated with white and striped at the ends. It was long and narrow, [illegible] round the body, and when its folds were loosened [illegible] money, and whatever else they accounted [illegible] luable. Over their shoulders was hung a small pouch of skin, containing a flint, a steel, and a spongeous substance, answering the purpose of tinder, and sometimes a small quantity of tobacco. It hence appeared, that their manners were derived from the Spaniards, and their abode was beyond the Portuguese frontiers. They all wore a high, conical-crowned hat of felt, straw, or palm-leaf; a sharp knife stuck in the girdle: and, though without shoe or stocking, a spur fixed to the heel by a strip of raw hide. A few among them, who, it may be, dwelt near some place of consequence, appeared in jackets or long blue coats, waistcoats of slink-skin, and boots buckled round the knees. A still smaller number wore neck-handkerchiefs and hangers, and had their attendants following them. Though the number of these people, particularly of the inferior class, was considerable, they seemed always unable to put off their jealousy of the Brazilians, and withdrew, at sunset to their quarters in the plain, four or five miles from the town.

"The equipments of the horses belonging to these men, were little different from those in common use on this part of the American continent. Their bridle-bits are crooked iron curbs, with cheek-plates; the mouth-piece also is crooked, and through the

upper part of the curve an iron ring is passed, about five inches in diameter, into which, when the bridle is put on, the horse's chin, or lower jaw, is thrust; so that the whole forms a most powerful curb.—There is only a single rein to the bridle, the two ends of which proceed from the points of the curb, and meet upon the horse's withers, in a ring about an inch in diameter, from which proceeds a lash four feet long: the whip being thus attached to the bridle, the horseman's right hand is left at liberty. The leather is formed from a hide neatly cut into long shreds, which are soaked in oil or melted tallow, until they are completely pliable; they are then plaited with equal neatness, and form a round thong as thick as the little finger. The headstall is formed of the same materials; and the bridle, altogether, is not only recommended by its appearance, but by its power to restrain the most headstrong animal. There is still more singularity in the stirrups, which are, in common, made from the transverse section of an ox's horn, brought nearly to a triangular shape; or of brass, bearing some resemblance to the vertical section of a bell. In both cases, they are so small as to admit only the tip of a boot, if the rider have any, or a few of the naked toes. They are attached to the saddle by straps, which cannot be lengthened or shortened. Though a saddle has been mentioned as a part of the horse-furniture of the strangers, it would have been more correct to speak of the *lumbillio*, which is universally used among them, and indeed all ranks of horsemen in Rio Grande. The *lumbillio*, borrowed from the Spanish colonists, and by them from their mother-country, is a sort of thin pannel about two feet long, of exactly the same form in its front and back, and covered with embossed leather. It is fastened to the horse by a bandage made of ten or a dozen thongs, all the ends of which terminate

in two iron rings. When this is thrown over it, and passed round the horse's body, the two rings are drawn together by a thong, so forcibly that the *lumbillio* cannot possibly move. A dried sheep-skin is usually the upper covering; and if the rider be a person of consequence, a skin is selected with long and orderly disposed wool, and dyed with indigo. In this case, too, the covering is kept in its place by a surcingle of white cotton, six inches broad, with figures of animals and birds interwoven in colours, most commonly in various shades of blue and red." *

The slaves of this district, "as they are less numerous than in most of the provinces, so" says Mr Luccock, "they appeared better and happier. The price paid for them was high, and there was great difficulty in procuring them: this may account, in part, for their lenient treatment. But I apprehend that a more efficient cause is, the moderate temperature of the climate, which enables their white masters to take a share in their labours." Yet here, as almost every where, "it seems sufficient," he adds, "that a man has the hue of a negro, to mark him out as an object on which tyranny may exercise itself."

The village of St Pedro do Norte on the other side of the harbour, which Mr Luccock represents as the port, consists of about a hundred miserable huts, placed amid loose and lofty hills of sand. Even in what are called the streets, the passengers are up to the ancles.† To the east of the village appears a

* Luccock's Notes, pp. 198—201.

† It is not a little singular, that Cazal takes no notice of St Pedro do Norte, mentioning only one place as designated by the name of that saint; but, "on the eastern bank of the river, in front of St Pedro," he places "the considerable and flourishing *arraial* of *St Joze*, with a hermitage of the same name." This, adds Mr Henderson, "is *the town's port*."

uniform, dreary desert of sand, blown up in
some of them two hundred feet high, connect
lower and curved ridge, exhibiting in minia
contour of our micaceous sand-stone mo
Pursuing the road northward, which passes
the peninsula lying between the Lagoa do
and the ocean, the land narrows, at the dist
about twelve miles, to a single league, and l
called the *Estreito*. "Near at hand," sa
Luccock, "is a village, the first, it is said, wh
Portuguese built in this part of the country:
the capital till 1750, and seems to have been
lished a century earlier, at which time it p
enjoyed the advantage of a port." This st
is at variance, however, with the account gi
Mr Henderson (from Cazal), that the site
town which was begun in the situation called E
and from which the removal was made to St
is a league to the south-west of the present c
well as with Mr Luccock's own description
old town, the ruins of which he found abou
miles from St Pedro. It is to be regretted
omits to mention the name of the village, whi
have been the first settlement, although at no
dignified with the name of town or capital. T
ferent places are apparently confounded un
name of Estreito.

"As the neck of land afterwards widens, it b
more solid, flat, and verdant, rich in herbag
supporting large herds of cattle. Lakes are
ed in every direction; and, in the wet seas
whole plain is covered with water, so that th
perish for want of sustenance, of which the nu
skeletons lying around afford melancholy ev

Is this St Pedro do Norte under another name? Or has
arisen since Mr Luccock was in Brazil, and has St Ped
overwhelmed by the sand?

On digging through the sandy soil, excellent clay is found in patches, which seems to indicate that the spot was once the bed of a lake which has been partially filled up by sand blown into it from the coast. On the sea-shore still exists a long line of pools, which will probably share the same fate. Nature has here produced," continues Mr Luccock, "one of her slow, but irresistible operations. On a careful examination of the coast, it will convincingly appear, I think, that it has formerly proceeded from the *Castillos Grandes* (two remarkable rocks so called, a little north of the Plata), by the west of the lake Mirim, the river Gonzales, and the Lagoa dos Patos, to the *morro* of Sta. Maria near Laguna ;* and if so, all to the east of this line is made ground, formed by sand driven up by the ocean. The two lakes which form the chief features of this part of the country, have probably been created by the rivers which flow into them, repelling the sand accumulated at their mouths by the occasional impetuosity of their currents, until the bar was formed in the dead water produced by the stream and the ocean. Here the bank would gradually rise above the high-water mark, and compel the river to bend its course; and, by constant acquisition, would grow broader and longer, and at length form an estuary within it. Thus, the Saboyty (or Saboyaty), the Ygaroon (or Jaguaron), and the Piratirim were forced to join before they reached the ocean, and their united surplus waters to pass off northward, forming, in process of time, the river Gonzales. In like manner, the Jacuhy, the Camapuam, and other rivers, were compelled by accumulation of sand under the lee of Sta Maria, to take a southern course, and produced the larger lake ; but this discharging the greater quantity of water, the stream has carried with it that of the smaller lake, and formed the Rio Gran-

* See p. 283.

de, whose bar is still proceeding southward. At t
the estuary must consist of a number of pools, so
times dry, and sometimes formed into one by an
crease of water. Some of them would, by degr
collect in their bottoms a quantity of mud, which
self accumulating, and aided by the flying sand, w
at length fill them up. Remnants of such lakes, c
along both the peninsulas, and the frequent existe
of clay beneath the sand, is an evidence that they w
once numerous. Had marine or fresh-water veg
bles been growing there, they would have been b
ed, but not destroyed, and perhaps, in the cours
ages, have been converted into different kinds
coal."*

The Lagoa dos Patos, (which takes its name,
cording to Cazal, from a nation of Indians, but,
Luccock informs us, that it is derived from a spe
of water-fowl so called,)† is the largest in Brazil,
ing 150 miles in length from N.E. to S.W.,‡
thirty-five miles across at its greatest width. It is
recipient of almost all the streams that water the no
ern and eastern portions of the province. It is v
shallow, and its water continues fresh as far as the
land dos Marinheiros, near the port of St Pe

* Notes, &c., pp. 233. 235, 236.

† "Towards evening, we saw a long line of dark-colo
birds flying across the lake, probably in the way to their ni
ly quarters. They were, in general, three, four, or five abr
and continued passing for more than an hour: though the d
ness prevented us from discerning the last of them, we recl
ed that the line which we had seen was full ten miles in ler
We fancied that they were urubues, (a species of vultu
which are known to assemble, at the close of day, in l
flocks; but our pilot said that they were *Patos*, a sort of
ver, large, brown, and exceedingly numerous on the c
From these, it seems, came the Portuguese name of the l
the Brazilian one is lost."—*Notes*, p. 222.

‡ Mr Luccock says, 130 miles in length from Cangazu,
from 40 to 45 in breadth from the mouth of the Camapu

Though encumbered with sand-banks and subject to violent squalls, it may be navigated with little anxiety. "I never heard," says Mr Luccock, "of more than one vessel being lost upon it." The peninsula lying between the lake and the ocean, is low and level, and almost in a direct line on the eastern side, but forms various points and bays on the opposite one.* The western shore of the lake is bold, but not rugged, and is cut by several rivers, whose mouths furnish places of resort for yachts employed in bringing down produce to St Pedro. The most important of these are, the Camapuam (Round Breasts) and the Jacuhy, or water of Jacues. The sources of the former are in the chain of low hills on the verge of the province, called the great Cochilha, which divide the tributary streams of the Rio Grande and those of the Uruguay: it flows with a rapid and disturbed current, interrupted by continued cataracts, for nearly a hundred miles, receiving fourteen streams from the south, and fifteen from the north, and falls into the lake about the middle of its western side, by five different channels, formed by four small islands, on which account it is often called the Five Fingers. Light vessels proceed fifteen miles up from its mouth, and, from its bold shores, bring down quantities of wheat. The Jacuhy, (sometimes called the Rio Pardo, which is one of its tributaries,) is a river of greater value. It rises in the province of St Paulo, at the western border of the great table-land of Curitiba, being formed by the union of several streams which irrigate those elevated campos. After traversing the southern declivity of the general *serra* for a few leagues, it turns eastward, describing innumerable windings for a course of thirty

* Among these the most southerly is the *Ponta do Mandana*, where have been found, Cazal states, vestiges of an Indian village and cemetery. Mr Luccock sought for these sepulchres to the north of St Pedro do Norte, but could discover no trace of them.

leagues, during which it collects the water of a
ber of smaller rivers, many of them navigable to
extent; it then suddenly bends towards the south
after running fifteen miles in this direction, ente
western side of the lake about four leagues bel
northern extremity. It is a fine, broad, and
river, with lofty and diversified banks, and
little islands. Being uninterrupted by cataracts
perfectly open to navigation, and Mr Luccoc
informed that it had been ascended several hu
miles. At the part where, suddenly bending to
the south, it receives the Cahy from the high
to the north, it is two miles in width, spreadin
a small lake.

On the northern bank of the Jacuhy, twen
miles from its mouth, and forty-three leagues no
St Pedro, is the pleasant town of Porto A
(generally written Portalegre,) the present cap
the province. It is situated on a declivity, and
mands a fine view of the river and the surrounding
try. The houses are well-built, white-washed
formed into streets, most of them broad and
The government-house and public offices are
summit of the hill. It has a church dedicat
Nossa Senhora Madre de Deos (Mother of G
chapel *Das Dores* (of Griefs), and an hospital
phans, and is the residence of the governor
province, an *ouvidor* (sheriff,) a *juiz de fora*,
a sort of mayor, and a vicar-general; there ar
royal Latin professors. It has a dock-yard wh
plentifully supplied with timber from the banks
streams that fall into the Jacuhy. "As a ca
says Mr Luccock, "its influence is wide: as
of commerce, it commands a large tract of c
and many navigable rivers. Several Englishme
long been settled round this favoured spot; b
country is not yet sufficiently advanced in the co
arts of civilized life, to render it a desirable resi

One of them has endeavoured to improve its agriculture, by introducing the plough on the banks of the Tacoary, about ninety miles above Portalegre; I fear without much effect. This part of the province is, however, daily and rapidly improving; though the people still want education, and are yet more destitute of moral and religious culture. This last want will hardly be matter of surprise, when it is considered, that a district extending over nearly six degrees of latitude, and four of longitude, comprising more than forty thousand square miles, is divided into five parishes, each containing five millions of acres; and all of them under the spiritual care of the bishop of Rio de Janeiro, whose residence is not within five hundred miles of the nearest part of this his charge.

"One great bar to improvement is, that much of the interior is still in the hands of the native Indians, whose animosity to white people is of the bitterest sort, and their purposes of vengeance for injuries received, have been so long bequeathed from father to son, as to be rooted in their hearts, as firmly as the colour is attached to their skin. Under the influence of this passion, they destroy every thing belonging to Europeans or their descendants, which falls in their way; even the cow and the dog are not spared. For such outrages they pay dearly; small forts or military stations being placed round the colonised parts of the district, from whence a war of plunder and extermination is carried on against them. In this warfare, not only are fire-arms made use of, but the *lasso* dogs, and all the stratagems which are usually employed against beasts of prey."*

The road to Portalegre from St Pedro do Norte, after crossing the broad and deep river Capibary, leads round the head of the lake. Mr Luccock mentions as one of the chief places in this route, the small but pleasantly situated village of Mustardos, near

* Notes, pp. 228, 229.

which it was attempted to found an English settlement, but the speculation failed.* The road to Laguna approaches the coast, running through a swampy and uninteresting region, to the ferry over the *Rio Tramandahy* (or *Tamandua*, Ant-eater river), which is, in fact, only the channel by which a great number of lakes discharge their waters. The passage is often dangerous, and the ferry is, like all the rest in this route, in a most wretched state. Twelve leagues further is the mouth of the Mampituba, between which and the Tramandahy, fourteen small rivers of crystaline water discharge themselves into the sea. Here is a military station, at which passports and luggage are examined, the Mampituba being the boundary between the provinces of Rio Grande and Sta Catherina. The journey from St Pedro to Sta Catherina, a distance of about 400 miles, has been performed by native horsemen in four days.

We return to St Pedro in order to start from thence to the westward, and afterwards to explore the southern confines of Brazil.

The Lake Mirim (small lake), which discharges itself into the Lake of Patos by the channel called the river of St Gonzales, is itself upwards of ninety miles in length, by twenty-five at its greatest breadth. It is very shallow, and, in the rainy season, widely extends its borders. The Gonzales is fifty miles in length; it is wide and handsome, and navigable by yachts of from 50 to 70 tons burthen, who by this channel pass into the Lake Mirim, and thence ascend the Jagua-

* No village of this name is mentioned by Mr Henderson; but, on the eastern side of the peninsula, is the lake of Mostardas, better known by the name of Peixe, nine leagues long, with little width, disemboguing into the sea at an elbow of land, that opens and closes annually. The settlement is, probably not far from its outlet. This lake is but one of the continued chain that extends northward, along the foot of the cordillera, to the river Mampituba.

ıd the Saboyaty to the fertile country lying at the
of Monte Video and Maldonado. By this
ɜ, goods are distributed through the interior,
ross the mountains even to the Uruguay. Be-
. the eastern shore of Lake Mirim and the At-
, another long and narrow lake extends for eigh-
ninety miles in a line nearly parallel to the coast.
:alled, Mr Luccock says, the Bay of Mangueira,
guein?) "not the one mentioned before, but
ɛr of the same name."* Between this and the
Mirim, the road passes.

leagues to the south-west of St Pedro do Sul is
raial of Povo Novo (new town), "ornamented
ı hermitage of Our Lady of Necessity." The
ɔn of this church has drawn inhabitants to the
who are stated by Cazal to be husbandmen,
ally from the Azores. "On what their labour
towed," remarks Mr Luccock, "I know not:
are certainly no marks of it in the cultivation of
il. Our Lady of Necessity is their patroness,
berally has she distributed her favours among
' A few miles further in this direction, the
y greatly improves, exhibiting not only some
astures and stately trees, but also a few well-
farm-houses. The plain of St Gonzales, to
it leads, is a level tract of rich meadow land,
ds of twenty miles long, and seven broad: it is
eral, however, "incommoded with a hot, hazy,
sive atmosphere." The river which gives name
plain, is nearly as broad as the Thames at Lon-
nd is said to be in some parts not less than
-four fathoms deep. Here Mr Luccock and
ty started an *emu* (the American ostrich), and
; their horses to their utmost speed, they gave it
"The bird," he says, "quickly left us far
, then closed its wings, and stalked on in care-

* Henderson writes it *Mangliera*, and states, that it is
s long, about four broad, and empties itself, at the
ı extremity, by an outlet called *Arroio Thahim*.

less security. Though the neighbouring sands ar the natural haunt of these birds, they were now nu merous on the plains, having been driven hither, suppose, by dry weather; we had in consequenc several chases of the same kind, all of them equall fruitless. On turning the corner of a wood we sud denly came within thirty yards of an emu, followed b about sixty young ones, which were, probably, sever collected broods. She marched off with a stately step carrying her head in a sort of semicircle, and lookin at us first with one eye, then with the other. W again followed at full gallop; but, as the pursuit con tinued, the distance sensibly increased. The youn birds clustered together, fluttered much, and advance with evident haste: the pace of the old one was dign fied and steady; she shewed no marks of weakness fear, or stupidity; on the contrary, while concerne for the safety of her charge, she seemed desirous save them from unnecessary fatigue. Our guide en tertained the common opinion of the country, that it the male bird which in this way guides and protec the young; but, as more agreeable to the order of na ture, I have not hesitated to speak of the leader as female.

"I kept one of these birds, for some time, within spacious stockado, until it became familiar and occa sionally impertinent; and he allowed me to stride ove his back, and could just support my weight. Mount ed by a boy of twelve years of age, he could run, an was easily guided by turning his head to the directio in which the rider wished him to proceed."*

Having crossed the Gonzales, there extends to wards the north, between the Passo dos Negros an the Lagoa dos Patos, a broad patch of swampy lan "the accumulated sediment of ages." In these fe are several large farming establishments: that of Pell tas, which stands about six or seven miles above th

* Notes, p. 210.

mouth of the river of that name, is said to occupy ten square leagues, a moderate extent for a grazing farm in Rio Grande. Towards the west, the country assumes a different aspect. Instead of sands partly consolidated and covered with the alluvial deposite brought down by the rivers, the land presents a gently varied surface and a rich loamy soil. An extensive tract, famous for its fine cattle, is comprehended under the name of *Charqueadas*, derived from the "*charqued*" beef which is prepared in this district for exportation.* "Some idea of the immense quantity thus prepared, may be formed from the fact," says Mr Luccock, "that, in one year, an individual, Joze Antonio dos Anjos, slaughtered 54,000 head of cattle, and charqued the flesh. The piles of bones which lay in his premises, far surpassed my utmost conceptions; and there were thousands of *urubues*, the vulture of South America, flying round and feeding on the offal. During the slaughtering season, it is not uncommon for large packs of dogs to make their appearance, and assist the vultures in picking the bones; and it is said that the ounce will do the same."

In the beginning of the seventeenth century, this province was covered with cattle, notwithstanding the devastation made among the herds by the Indians and the ounce. The conquerors, however, as if imagining the stock to be inexhaustible, commenced a system of wanton destruction, "resembling that of the tiger and the wolf in the sheep-fold." This havoc was directed principally against the calves. One seldom sufficed for the dinner of two comrades, because both, perhaps, wished for the tongue, and, rather than divide it, they

* "When the cattle are killed and skinned, the flesh is taken off from the sides in one broad piece, something like a flitch of bacon; it is then slightly sprinkled with salt, and dried in the sun. In that state, it is the common food of the peasantry in the hotter parts of Brazil, is in itself by no means to be despised, and, as it will keep long, forms an excellent sea-stock."

would slaughter a second. There were men who would kill an animal in the morning, in order to breakfast on broiled kidneys; and, not to be incommoded by carrying home any part of the meat, would kill another for dinner. "There was no banquet without veal only afew days old."* At length, both the Spanish and Portuguese governors found it necessary to interfere; and an edict was passed by the governor of Monte Video, about the year 1650, prohibiting the slaughter of calves and of all oxen under five years old. This partly checked the mischief, though it has not put an end to the wasteful consumption; and in some parts, owing to the warfare carried on near the banks of the Plata, the *charqued* beef has at times been scarce.

In 1802, there were reckoned among the subjects of the Portuguese government in Rio Grande, 539 proprietors of land, consisting of two classes, distinguished as *fazendeiros*, farmers, and *lavradores*, husbandmen. The latter, who breed only what is necessary for their own consumption, possess generally about two square leagues of land: the former will farm from eight to ten leagues; and some of these fazendas, Mr Luccock states, are reported to extend to a hundred square leagues, or nearly 600,000 acres!

"To each three square leagues are allotted four or five thousand head of cattle, six men, and a hundred horses;† though, according to circumstances, such as the distance from navigable waters, or from church, there must be a variety in the number of oxen kept for the business of a farm. The proportion of horses will appear a very large one; but it is to be

* Henderson, p. 125.

† In a fazenda of three leagues, it is computed, Mr Henderson says, that one thousand young cattle, male and female, are branded, or marked, annually: the number sent off or killed, may be judged of from this calculation.

remembered, that they cost nothing in keeping, as they are turned out on the plains; that no one about the farm, not even a slave, ever goes the shortest distance on foot; and that each manager will change his horse two or three times in a day. About a hundred cows are allowed for the supply of milk, butter, cheese, and veal, to a farm of the average size. Hogs are usually found near the houses, but little care is taken of them: they wander about, root up the earth, devour reptiles, and make a good part of their subsistence on the waste parts of the cattle slaughtered. There are few sheep, and they are remarkably light and ill made, with a short, ordinary wool; which, however, might easily be improved. This wool is at present used, partly, unstripped from the skins, as saddle-covers and the like; partly, for the stuffing of beds and matresses. The country is so thinly peopled, its inhabitants have so little liking to mutton and the wild dogs and other beasts and birds of prey are so numerous, that there can be little inducement to increase the flocks."

"The breed of sheep," says Mr Henderson, "would, if attended to, much exceed that of cattle, in consequence of their generally producing two at a birth; they, however, are not numerous, few farmers possessing one thousand head, and the major part not any. Nothing here appears so easy and cheap as the multiplication of this animal. For the purpose of shepherding a flock of one thousand, two cur-dogs are sufficient, bred up in the following mode. As soon as they are whelped, the lambs of a ewe are killed, the puppies are put to her, and she suckles them until she becomes habituated to treat them as her young, when, upon opening their eyes, and seeing no other benefactor, they attach themselves to her, and play with the lambs as if they were of the same species. Nothing is ever given them to eat; they are shut in the fold with the sheep, and, on ob-

taining strength and vigour to attend the flock, th
are suffered to go at large, when they accompany
to the field. In a little time, and without more i
struction, they are so familiarized with the sheep, th
they never separate from them. When it happe
that a ewe lambs in the field, and the lamb cann
accompany the mother, in consequence of its not y
having sufficient strength to follow her, one of t
dogs watches near, and, if he finds that the lamb ca
not follow the mother to the flock, he carries it in h
mouth, without doing it the least harm. No oth
animal or unknown person can approach the sheep
which these dogs are the guardians, without the ri
of being attacked. The other domestic dogs and t
hordes of the *chimarroe* dogs are the greatest en
mies to the flock: against them and the birds of pre
which pick out the eyes of the lambs, the vigilance
the watch-dogs is requisite."*

The same *fazendeiros* breed also droves of hors
and mules: the latter are most lucrative, a male o
being of at least double the value of a horse.
low, however, is the value of land and of stock, th
Mr Luccock was offered *an island* in the Lake
Patos, comprehending eighteen or twenty squa
miles, including its buildings and cattle, the latter wa
ranted to exceed 4000 head,—for 8000 cruzados,
about 900*l.* sterling, and this in payment for good
the wood and fisheries were not deemed worth taki
into the calculation. Declining the estate, Mr Lu
cock offered the proprietor *the same sum* for the hid
of the cattle alone, provided he would deliver them
St Pedro, within a month fit for exportation. T
reply given was that hands could not be found
slaughter the cattle, and cure the hides; and that,
they were to be obtained, the work and wages wo

* Henderson's History of Brazil, p. 128.

put the owner to an expense exceeding the sum offered!

Mr Luccock was here witness to the Brazilian amusement of an *ox-chase*, a sport not less hazardous, and perhaps not much less refined, than the pleasures of an English stag-hunt.

"After a ride of three or four miles on a large open plain, we found about 400 head of cattle. We rode gently round, to bring them into a more compact body, and made the animal which was to be chased, distinctly known to every individual of the party. Our settled object was to drive him to the house; and, to render the sport as complete as possible, the *lasso** was not to be used until there appeared a pro-

* "The *lasso* is made of narrow thongs, plaited in the same way as the bridles, and is about seven or eight yards long. One end of it is firmly fixed to the hinder part of the saddle, generally on the right side: at the other end is an iron ring, about two inches in diameter. The horseman, about to use the *lasso*, forms a sort of running-noose, by passing a portion of it through the ring; this is taken in the right hand, so as that the ring may be at the opposite part of the circle; the noose is then swung with care over the head, until the extreme part of it, including the ring, acquires a considerable momentum. The instrument, thus prepared, as the man advances towards his selected victim, is in due time discharged, carries off the remainder of the string, which before hung loosely in coils on the fingers of the left hand, and seldom fails to entangle the beast. A well-trained horse, though at full speed when the *lasso* is thrown, instantly stops, and, turning round, pulls against the animal, which is now attached to him. The balls are three in number, round, and nearly three inches in diameter. The external part of each is a sort of purse, made of hide, rendered pliable by soaking: the purse is filled with sand, and the aperture drawn close. In drying, the leather contracts, and the whole becomes as hard as a stone. To each ball a string is attached, three or four feet long, made of plaited thongs, like the *lasso;* and the three strings are united by a knot, at two feet distance from the balls. This may be called the handle of the instrument; for

bability that he would otherwise escape. Some o the people then dashed into the midst of the herd attentively observing the selected animal. One ha of the oxen were thus driven at once from the spot and others, which chose to do so, were permitted t follow without molestation; but, wherever the victi turned, a horseman met him, and stopped his career The work was easy until the remaining group wa reduced to about twenty, which then made violen attempts to rejoin their comrades, and fiercely attack ed the huntsmen who intercepted them. In a shor time, four of them, being hard pressed, plunged int some watery ground about two miles from the house and among them was the object of the chase. Whe driven from the water, this small number were mor harassed than before, and perceiving their danger exerted themselves with redoubled violence. Some times we were obliged to ride hard; and great cool ness and address were necessary to prevent their es cape behind us and into a wood, which we were now approaching. In this last respect, our efforts were vain: they gained this refuge, and we could no longer act in concert. The wood was full of thick bushes of myrtle, and many trees spread their arms horizontally seven or eight feet from the ground. It was matter of high gratification, as well as wonder, to observe how our huntsmen rounded the bushes, and

the person using it takes the knot in his right hand, and having giving it the necessary velocity, by swinging it over his head with all his might, throws it at the legs of the horse or ox which he wishes to secure. In their progress, the balls spread to the utmost distance which the strings will allow, and reaching the leg, generally pass round it; and though, perhaps only slightly entangling the animal, sufficiently impede its flight."

The custom was derived from the Maraocato and other Indian tribes, who used the *lasso* and balls with great effect against Mendonca, when he landed and founded the city of Buenos Ayres.

bent under the branches, so as sometimes to hang on the sides of their horses. Though unable to follow, I soon encountered our chief, who had made an unsuccessful cast with his *lasso*, and was disentangling it from the branches of a tree. I shall never forget the ardour and rapidity with which he afterwards darted and wheeled among the trees, nor lose the conviction fixed upon my mind, what execution such men, so trained, must be capable of in a country like this. My musings were soon interrupted by reaching the beach, and seeing at a distance our young hero with the ox securely attached to his horse by the *lasso*, and leading the captive towards the house. The instrument had gone round the horns, and was fixed close to the crown of his head. The animal, thus entangled, advanced with the most malicious vexation, and made many ferocious efforts to gore the horse, which had before pursued, and now led him; but the wary creature, which had often before been yoked to an unnatural and violent mate, kept his eye upon the ox, and pulled at the *lasso* so as to keep it always on the stretch, and himself two springs in advance. In his precautions he was greatly assisted by his rider, who, with equal care, watched the maddening spirit of the beast, and gave signals to the horse. Convinced, at length, that his attempts to gore his leader were vain, the ox became sullen, and was partly dragged onward. While he was in this mood, the horse passed to the right of a detached bush, and the ox, by a sudden spring, got nearly abreast with him on the left: thus, the *lasso* was brought over his back, and he was enabled to employ his utmost might to draw the horse round the bush; the horse also used all his power to counteract this manœuvre; and thus the great strength of the *lasso* was proved. By this time, the whole party was again collected, and another *lasso* applied to assist in conducting the captive, which, seemingly conscious that he was completely subdued,

walked along quietly. A boat had just reached th beach; and the people were still on board, when th treacherous animal, as soon as he came near enough made an unexpected attack, and caused them to tum ble, one over another, into the water, to the grea amusement of the spectators.

"Returning to the hut, after a chase of three hour milk and fruit were served to us in abundance; whil the beast was taken from his former bondage and tie to a post, where I found him bellowing with madnes and still furiously striving to release himself. A ma now came forward with an instrument, called a *fa cam*,* somewhat resembling both a large carving knife and a short sword; and, warning every one t be on his guard, passed near the heels of the ox, an endeavoured, by a backhanded stroke, to hough hin The attempt was clumsily made, and the beas though wounded, was not disabled. Another too the instrument, and used it with greater effect; whe the ox gave a desperate kick at the operator, and snapping the tendon, fell on his haunches. A thir then drew a sharp knife across his throat: blood co piously followed; and, with a deep bellow, expressive of rage and agony, he yielded up his life. Imme diately the people set about skinning the beast, an preparing a part of him for dinner. The forme operation was performed in a workman-like manner and the skin, as it was taken off, being carefull stretched upon the ground, preserved the flesh fro blood and dirt. During this process, fires had bee kindled, and had burned down to clear ember Slices of flesh were then cut off from the ribs, as th choicest part, for the master and his guests and roas ed at a fire apart; afterwards, the attendants helpe themselves as they pleased, and cooked their portio after their own modes.

* *Faca* is the Portuguese word for a knife of any kind.

"Horses are trained for the exercises of the field, ' fastening a dry hide to the back part of the saddle, id allowing it to trail on the ground. As the horse oves, the hide rattles, and the noise alarms him: e attempts to fly, when it beats against his heels, id he kicks at it violently; but, soon convinced that ll his alarm and rage are fruitless, he learns to be atient and quiet. In this state, a person mounts id compels him to move forward; at first gently, fterwards at an increased pace. He begins with rampling upon the hide; but this incommodes him, erhaps almost throws him down backwards; he hen sits down his feet more carefully and safely. The contrivance induces him also to keep an eye rned on the object behind; while the rider takes im over rough or boggy ground, obliging him at he same time to look forward and mark where he ' going. Thus he forms a habit of quickly discern- g danger, and avoiding it, from whatever quarter may come. So much are the Brazilian horses l general fenced against alarms, that I hardly ver met with one of the description which we call kittish."*

The country south of the Piratinim (Little Fish ver), extending to the northern shores of the Plata, aries little from the northern part of the province; ıly the eminences are somewhat more lofty. Cape t Mary, the first point which presents itself, and deed the only one along this line of coast, is a flat, ndy tongue of land. What is sometimes mistaken r it, is the singular group of rocks, a little to the rth of the Cape, called the Great Castelhos, from eir supposed resemblance, at a distance, to castles ilt on the beach. They consist of three large mas- s of naked granite, rising about a hundred feet from e water, with perpendicular sides and roundish

* Luccock's Notes, pp. 224-7.

tops. They are backed by low woody hills. A fi sandy beach extends northward of these, to the *Ca telhos Pequenos* (Little Castelhos), near which the fort of Santa Teresa. From this point, the ro to Maldonado along the southern coast, is represer ed by Mr Luccock as very delightful, passing throu a country diversified with small hills well wood and watered, and abounding with deer, but thin peopled. The greater part of the inhabitants we at this period (1808-1813) Spanish subjects, a strongly prejudiced against the Brazilians. Passi westward from the *Castelhos Grandes*, we first me with marshes and sandy plains, forming a sort margin to the country, nearly ten miles in breadt "Beyond this begins an elevation of about a hundr feet, which, though slightly varied with hill and dal appears, from the sea, so nearly level, and its declivi so regular, as to convert the work of winds and wav into the appearance of an artificial embankmen It terminates before we reach the rocky coast of Ma donado."

The town of Maldonado stands on the brow of hill gently rising to the height of 250 feet above th sea level: it is fifteen leagues west of Cape St Mary From the sea, it has no very attractive appearance Immediately off the coast lie two islands: one of them, called *Lobos* (Wolves' Island,) displays bu little verdure, being almost all rocks and stones, bu has good water, and is about two miles in circum ference;* the other, *Gorita*, has a few buildings upo it, and under its lee is the harbour, the beach which is exposed to a heavy surf, which renders lan ing sometimes dangerous, and even impracticabl There are two entrances: that on the eastern si

* Mr Lindley gives the latitude of the island of Lobos, 3 1, S.; the longitude, *east point*, 54° 31' 30"; *west point*, 5 35' W.

of the island is very narrow; that on the west is broad deep, and to small vessels perfectly safe; but, about midway, there is a rock with twenty-four feet water upon it. The anchoring-ground is near the centre of the bay, where lies the wreck of a British ship, the Agamemnon. The town is thus described by Mr Luccock, as it appeared in 1808-9. "The principal buildings form a quadrangle, on the north side of which is a considerable *estalagem*, or inn; on the south side, a church, which, when finished, will be, for such a place, magnificent: the common habitations occupying the rest of the square, are built of brick, and covered with straw. The houses in the streets issuing from the square, or running parallel with its sides, are chiefly low and constructed of earth. The whole number is about two hundred and fifty; that of the inhabitants, from eight hundred to a thousand. It is manifest, how much ecclesiastical interests prevail here over civil ones; though the seemingly incongruous splendour of the church may in part be vindicated by the consideration, that it is a sort of cathedral of an extensive district, called by the name of St Carlos, to whom the church is dedicated. A village bearing the same name, lies about nine miles from the town, towards the north east, and appears to have been formerly the chief place in the district."*

In the track from Maldonado to Monte Video, the traveller soon after passes over the only lofty ground in the neighbourhood, which is part of the ridge, running nearly north and south for the distance of 400 miles, called the Great Cochilha, and constituting one of the great abutments of the-table land of southern Brazil. Its southern extremity forms the

* Mr Luccock probably refers to *Pueblo Novo*, two leagues to the N. of Maldonado, "founded," Cazal says, "for the habitation of the Portuguese prisoners of Colonia." It has a church called St Carlos.

bold shore of Ponte Negro, which presents a perpendicular face of 300 feet above the water, terminating in three distinct summits, which distinguish it from every other point in the estuary. Approached from the east, its jagged heights are visible as far off as fifty miles. To the east and west, it sends out many spurs, which divide the streams originating in its elevated parts, but they are not so lofty as the ridge itself. Descending from this height, the traveller enters on a plain intersected by short, inconstant streams, but destitute of wood. The road winds round the bay of Santa Rosa, "a dangerous bight for vessels, when the wind blows fiercely from the south-east, and pours into it the whole weight of the Southern Ocean." As he approaches the city the mountain which gives name to the place, and is constantly in view, becomes a more prominent object. Mr Luccock thus describes its appearance: "It stands close to the water, unsupported by buttresses unattached to any ridge; it is of a blackish-green hue, of a formal conical shape, and its towering head is crowned with a small building and a signal-staff. It presents itself as the firm guardian of the mighty Plata, and deserves to be accounted one of the finest military stations, if the water, said to spring upon it, be sufficiently abundant. Possibly it may become what it seems fitted to be,—one of the pivots on which the commerce of the world shall hereafter turn. Its importance is well understood by Brazilian statesmen, and nothing short of overwhelming force will avail to wrench it out of their hands."

Mr Mawe was at Monte Video at the eventful period of the British expedition against Buenos Ayres in 1808. It was then in the possession of the Spaniards, and that gentleman had nearly fallen a victim to the national prejudices and unprincipled conduct of the governor. While he was detained here, at first

a loose prisoner, and afterwards a prisoner at large, he had but too much leisure to acquire some knowledge of the town and its vicinity; and we shall avail ourselves of his description, by far the most accurate that we possess, of this part of the coast.

"Monte Video is a tolerably well-built town, standing on a gentle elevation at the extremity of a small peninsula, and is walled entirely round. Its population amounts to between 15,000 and 20,000 souls. The harbour, though shoal, and quite open to the *pamperos*, or south-west gales, is the best in the Rio de la Plata; it has a very soft bottom of deep mud. When the wind continues for some time at north-east, ships drawing twelve feet water are frequently aground for several days, so that the harbour cannot be called a good one for vessels above three hundred or four hundred tons.

"There are but few capital buildings; the town in general consists of houses of one story, paved with bricks, and provided with very poor conveniences. In the square is a cathedral, very handsome, but awkwardly situated: opposite to it, is an edifice divided into a town-house, or *cabildo*, and a prison. The streets, having no pavement, are always either clouded with dust or loaded with mud, as the weather happens to be dry or wet. In the season of drought, the want of conduits for water is a serious inconvenience, the well, which principally supplies the town, being two miles distant.*

* Mr Henderson says: "The inhabitants drink rain-water collected in cisterns, which are formed in the inner courts common to the houses; and this water is pure and excellent. There are also pits dug near the sea-side, whence water is brought in carts for the supply of the town." On the authority of the *Corografia Brazilica*, he makes the town, or rather "city," 130 miles W. of Cape Mary, and 120 miles E. of Buenos Ayres. It stands, according to Mr Lindley, in latitude 34° 55' S., longitude 56° 4' W.

"Provisions here are cheap, and in great abundance. Beef in particular is very plentiful, and, though rarely fat or fine, makes excellent soup. The best parts of the meat may, indeed, be called tolerable, but they are by no means tender. The pork is not eatable. Such is the profusion of flesh-meat, that the vicinity for two miles round, and even the purlieus of the town itself, present filthy spectacles of bones and raw flesh at every step, which feed immense flocks of sea-gulls, and in summer breed myriads of flies, to the great annoyance of the inhabitants, who are obliged at table to have a servant or two continually employed in fanning the dishes with feathers, to drive away those troublesome intruders.

"The inhabitants, particularly the creoles, are humane and well-disposed, when not actuated by political or religious prejudices. Their habits of life are much the same as those of their brethren in Old Spain, and seem to proceed from the same remarkable union of two opposite but not incompatible qualities, indolence and temperance. The ladies are generally affable and polite, extremely fond of dress, and very neat and cleanly in their persons. They adopt the English costume at home, but go abroad usually in black, and always covered with a large veil or mantle. At mass, they invariably appear in black silk, bordered with deep fringes. They delight in conversation, for which their vivacity eminently qualifies them, and they are very courteous to strangers.

"The climate of Monte Video is humid. The weather, in the winter months (June, July, and August,) is at times boisterous, and the air in that season is generally keen and piercing. In summer, the serenity of the atmosphere is frequently interrupted by tremendous thunder-storms, preceded by dreadful lightning, which frequently damages the shipping, and followed by heavy rain, which sometimes destroys the harvest. The heat is troublesome, and is rendered

more so to strangers, by the swarms of mosquitoes, which infest every apartment.

"The town stands on a basis of granite, the feldspar of which is for the most part of an opaque milk-white colour, in the decomposing state; in some places, it is found of a flesh-red colour and crystallized. The mica is generally large and foliated, in many places imperfectly crystallized. It is obvious, that the excessive quantity of mud in the harbour and throughout the banks of the river, cannot have been formed from this stratum. The high mount on the opposite side of the bay, which is crowned with a light-house, and gives name to the town, is principally composed of clay-slate, in laminæ perpendicular to the horizon. This substance appears much like basalt in texture, but its fracture is less conchoidal; it decomposes into an imperfect species of wacké, and ultimately into ferruginous clay, from beds of which water is observed to flow in various parts of the mountain.

"The vicinity of Monte Video is agreeably diversified with low, gently sloping hills, and long valleys watered by beautiful rivulets; but the prospects they afford are rarely enlivened by traces of cultivation: few enclosures are seen, except the gardens of the principal merchants. The same defect appears in a north-east direction from the town, where similar varieties of hill, valley, and water prevail, and seem to want only the embellishment of sylvan scenery to complete the landscape. Some wood, indeed, grows on the margin of the *Riachuelo*, which is used for the building of hovels and for fuel. There is a pleasant stream about ten leagues from Monte Video, called the Louza, the banks of which seem to invite the labour of the planter, and would certainly produce abundance of timber. It is to be remarked, that the almost entire want of this article here, occasions great inconvenience and expense: wood for mechanical purposes is extremely scarce, and planks are so dear

that hardly one house with a boarded floor is to be found.

"In this vicinity, the farms are of great extent; few are so small as six miles in length, by a league in width. Such is the scarcity of wood, that the land-marks, when not already designated by nature in a chain of hills, a rivulet, or a valley, are made by ranges of stones of a peculiar form. The *quintas* (or farms owned by gentlemen), with the country-houses built upon them, as rural retreats for their proprietors resident in Monte Video, were extremely pleasant and agreeable; the gardens were full of fine flowers and fruits, and every thing about these establishments indicated so much peace, harmony, and good-neighbourhood, as to make an impression on the mind of a stranger equally pleasing and indelible. But the scene, alas! has been changed through the intestine discords produced by a revolutionary war; and the colony has been reduced from a state of happiness to one of distress and wretchedness. The inhabitants of the interior, having been instigated to plunder each other until nothing remained, ranged themselves under the banners of the predatory chieftain Artigas, and formed a desperate banditti, who robbed and frequently murdered all they met; drove the peaceable inhabitants from their farms, plundered their houses, took away their cattle, reduced the rich to poverty, and the poor to wretchedness, so as almost to desolate this once flourishing colony. A man who, but a few months before possessed 100,000 head of cattle, was driven from his estate, and obliged to purchase, at the price of one shilling per pound, the meat which he had formerly left in the slaughter-house, having killed his beasts merely for their hides; so that the necessaries of life, which were once to be procured almost gratuitously, became extravagantly dear; and the horrors of approaching famine were superadded to those of anarchy and spoliation."

At the distance of about forty leagues from Monte Video, in a north-easterly direction, the ridge of hills already mentioned, gradually lessens and disappears, and the country opens finely on the traveller's left, intersected by numerous rivulets. Mr Mawe's place of destination was the establishment of a noble-minded Spaniard, situated at the junction of two small streams, which form the Barriga Negra, a river flowing into the Lagoa Mirim, which gives its name to the estate.

"Barriga Negra is distant about 160 miles north-east from Monte Video, about 120 from Maldonado, and 90 from the town of Minas. The country around it is mountainous, well-watered, and not destitute of wood. The banks of the streams are thickly covered with trees, rarely, however, of large size, for the creeping plants, interweaving with the shoots, check their growth, and form an impenetrable thicket. Here are numbers of great breeding-estates, many of which are stocked with from 60,000 to 200,000 head of cattle. These are guarded principally by men from Paraguay, called Peons, who live in hovels built for the purpose at convenient distances. Ten thousand head are allotted to four or five Peons, whose business it is to collect them every morning and evening, and once or twice a month to drive them into pens, where they are kept for a night. The cattle by this mode of management are soon tamed: a ferocious or vicious beast I never saw among them. Breeding is alone attended to; neither butter nor cheese is made, and milk is scarcely known as an article of food. The constant diet of the people, morning, noon, and night, is beef, eaten almost always without bread, and frequently without salt. This habitual subsistence on strong food would probably engender diseases, where it not corrected by frequently taking an infusion of their favourite herb *Matté*, at all times of the day, when inclination calls for it.

"The dwellings of the Peons are in gen
wretched, the walls being formed by a fev
posts inter-woven with small branches of tr
tered with mud inside and out, and the roof
with long grass and rushes. The door i
wicker-work, or, in its stead, a green hide
on sticks, and removable at pleasure. The
of these poor hovels consists of a few skulls
which are made to serve for seats; and of a
hide to lie upon. The principal, if not the s
ing utensil, is a spit or rod of iron, stuck in tl
in an oblique position, so as to incline over
The beef, when spitted, is left to roast unti
next the fire is supposed to be done enough;
position is altered, and the change is occasic
peated, until the whole is cooked. The juic
meat, by this mode of roasting, help to men
and indeed the people seem to think that th
for nothing else. The meat, which is natu
and coarse, being thus dried to a cake, bear
finity to the boasted roast beef of England.
some parts is so extremely scarce, that the
strange expedient is resorted to for a supply.
mares in this country are kept solely for bree
are never trained to labour, they generally
a great degree, the due proportion; a flocl
is frequently killed, and their carcases soon
dry, are used as firing, (with the exception of
and tails,) which, when properly prepared, a
for exportation.

"The Peons are chiefly emigrants from I
and it is a singular fact, that, among the nun
are here settled, very few women are to l
A person may travel in these parts for
gether without seeing or hearing of a single
the course of his journey. To this circumst
be attributed the total absence of domestic
the dwellings of these wretched men, and th

apathy observable in their dispositions and habits. It is true, that the mistress of an estate may occasionally visit it for a few months, but she is obliged during her stay to live in great seclusion, on account of the dreadful consequences to be apprehended from being so exposed.

"The climate and soil are equally favourable for the growth of grapes, apples, peaches, and, in short, every species of fruit belonging to the temperate zone, but these are known here only as rarities. That inestimable root, the potatoe, would thrive abundantly, if once introduced; but, though much has been said in recommendation of it, the people remain totally averse to this or any other proposal for improving their means of subsistence, and seem to wish for nothing beyond the bare necessaries of life. Indeed, the state of society among them lessens those ties which naturally attach men to the soil on which they are accustomed to subsist. The Peons, brought from Paraguay in their infancy, grow up to the age of manhood in a state of servitude, uncheered by domestic comfort. At that period, they generally wander, in search of employment, toward the coast, where money is in greater plenty. There is no specie in circulation in the interior: their wages are paid monthly in notes on Monte Video. The men, for the most part, are an honest and harmless race, though quite as liable, from the circumstances of their condition, to acquire habits of gambling, as the higher classes of the people, numbers of whom fall victims to that seductive vice.* Such, indeed, is their excessive propensity to

* There would seem to be at least exceptions to their honesty, however, and their harmlessness is equally questionable. Mr Mawe, on learning that Monte Video was in the possession of the English, had planned his escape from his friendly host at Barriga Negra, in concert with two Peons whom he had hired and bribed to be his guides. He owed his life, there can be little doubt, to the intimation conveyed to him by an un-

gambling, that they frequently carry cards in their pocket, and, when an opportunity occurs, form parties, and retire to a convenient place, where one of them spreads his *poncho* or mantle on the ground, in lieu of a table. When the loser has parted with his money, he will stake his clothes, so that the game generally continues until one of them goes away almost naked. This bad practice often leads to serious consequences. I once observed a party playing in the neighbourhood of a chapel after mass had been said, when the clergyman came and kicked away the cards in order to put an end to the game. On this, one of the Peons rose up, and retiring a few paces, thus accosted the intruder: 'Father, I will obey you as a priest; but' (laying his hand on his knife) 'you must beware how you molest our diversion.' The clergyman knew the desperate character of these men too well to remonstrate, and retired very hastily, not a little chagrined. On another occasion, a Peon was gambling with a Spanish corporal in the prison-yard, when a dispute arising, the latter drew his sword on his unarmed antagonist, and wounded him so severely in the arm, that he was obliged to undergo amputation the day following. It is usual for a Peon who has been fortunate at play, to go to Monte Video, and clothe himself anew in the shop of a slop-seller. While the shopman is looking out the articles he calls for, he deliberately places his dollars on the counter, in separate piles, assigning each to its destined purpose. He then retires to a corner, and attires himself. An unfortunate comrade invariably attends him, who examines his cast clothes, and, if better than his own, puts them on. After passing a few days in idleness, he sets out on his return home, where he appears in his new dress.

known person, that they had been overheard planning his murder. "You know," he was told, "they are both gamblers, and one of them killed two men last year."

"The common dress of the people is such as might be expected from their indolence and poverty. They generally go without shoes and stockings: indeed, as they rarely go on foot, they have seldom occasion for shoes. Some of them, particularly the Peons, make a kind of boots from the raw skins of young horses, which they frequently kill for this sole purpose. When the animal is dead, they cut the skin round the thigh, about eighteen inches above the gambrel; having stripped it, they stretch and dress it until it loses the hair and becomes quite white. The lower part, which covered the joint, forms the heel, and the extremity is tied or sewed up to cover the toes. These boots, when newly finished, are of a delicate colour, and very generally admired. The rest of their apparel consists of a jacket, which is universally worn by all ranks, and a shirt and drawers, made of a coarse cotton cloth brought from Brazil. Children run about with no dress but their shirts until their fifth or sixth year. Their education is very little attended to, and is confined to mere rudiments. A man who is able to read and write, is considered to have all the learning he can desire."

The civil war between Monte Video and Buenos Ayres, which ensued upon the expulsion of the British forces from the Plata, has produced a lamentable change in the aspect of this once flourishing city. For some time, the party in the Spanish interest maintained the ascendancy, notwithstanding an effort on the part of the creoles to follow the example of Buenos Ayres, in throwing off the yoke of Spain. At length, in 1810, open hostilities commenced between the two cities. The government of Buenos Ayres, having excited the people of the *Banda Oriental** to revolt, laid siege to Monte Video, which

* That is, *the eastern shore* (of the Plata); the name applied to the disputed territory or Spanish part of Rio Grande,

was carried on at intervals, being alternately abandoned and resumed, as they were successful or otherwise in the struggle with the Spanish royalists in the upper provinces, till the close of the year 1814, when the republicans, succeeded in taking the place. During all this time, the intercourse between the city and the interior was almost entirely suspended, and its trade of course declined. The ruinous effects of a protracted siege may easily be imagined. But the misfortunes of the inhabitants were not at an end. A few months after the establishment of a republican government in Monte Video, (the first acts of which had been to set up a press and to open colleges and schools,) the troops of Buenos Ayres were called off to combat the enemy in the upper provinces, and the place fell soon after into the hands of Artigas and his banditti. This extraordinary man was a native of Monte Video,† the

lying between the Uruguay and the Atlantic, and bordering on the Plata.

* The following account of this extraordinary brigand was given to Mr Brackenridge in 1818, by General Carrera, who had recently paid him a visit. "He painted him as a kind of half savage, possessing a strong natural mind, taciturn, but shrewd in his remarks when he chose to speak. He wore no uniform or mark of distinction, and took up his abode in a cart or waggon, caring little for the refinements or comforts of civilised life, to which, in fact, he had never been much accustomed. His life had been passed in the plains, and he had an aversion to living in towns, and to the constraints of polished society. His residence then, was at a small village on the Rio Negro, called Purification, consisting of a few huts constructed with mud, or ox hides; but his seat of government often shifted its place. He lives on the same fare, and in the same manner, with the gauchos around him, being in truth nothing but a gaucho himself. When told of a pamphlet published against him at Buenos Ayres, he spoke of it with the utmost indifference, and said, 'My people cannot read.' He has about him a small body of men, who are considered as regular soldiers, but his chief force consists of the herdsmen of the plains; its number is, therefore, extremely fluctuating, as it cannot be kept long together. His followers are greatly at-

son of respectable parents; but, when quite a youth, he became enamoured of the wild life of the herdsmen, and joined a band of robbers and smugglers who infested the country. In the course of time he became a noted leader. When, however, about the year 1798, the depredations and murders committed by these marauders compelled the Spanish government to establish a provincial corps for the express purpose of scouring the country and repressing their excesses, Artigas, after having been for nearly twenty years an outlaw, was induced to except of a free pardon and a commission, which his father had interest enough to obtain in the hope of reclaiming him; and so effectually did he hunt down his old companions, that the country was restored to comparative tranquillity. At the commencement of the civil war between Monte Video and Buenos Ayres, he had risen to the rank of cap-

tached to him. His fame and superior intellect command their respect, at the same time that he indulges them in a certain kind of familiarity, which wins their affections. A few simple words, liberty, country, tyrants, &c. to which each one attaches his own meaning, serve as the ostensible bond of their union, which in reality arises from their predisposition to an unrestrained roving life. His authority is perfectly absolute and without the slightest control; he sentences to death, and orders to execution, with as little formality as a dey of Algiers. He is under the guidance of an apostate priest, of the name of Monterosa, who acts as his secretary, and writes his proclamations and letters; for although Artigas has not a bad head, he is by no means good at inditing. Monterosa professes to be, in the literal sense, a follower of the political doctrines of Paine; and prefers the constitution of Massachusetts as the most democratic, without seeming to know that the manners and habits of a people are very important considerations. The men bearing arms under Artigas, probably amount to six or eight thousand; but the number at any time embodied is much less; the want of commissaries and regular supplies, rendering it impossible to keep them together. The neighbouring Indian tribes are also devoted to him, principally through the means of his adopted son, an Indian named Andres."

tain in the Spanish service; but, in 1811, having it said, taken offence at some real or fancied insult, he c serted the royalists, and came to Buenos Ayr where he was gladly received by the patriot gove ment. At the head of his guerillas, he gained c siderable reputation by defeating the Spanish tro under Elio, at Las Piedras. It was not long, ho ever, before his impatience of control discovered its in a reluctance to obey the orders of Sarratea, t commander in chief; and he at length became qu unmanageable. On the convention of an Orien congress by general Rondeau, for the purpose nominating deputies for a national congress and provincial governor, Artigas took fire, annulled t transactions of the assembly, and then, on finding opposition fruitless, deserted Rondeau at a criti moment, and betook himself with his guerillas to t plains. Posadas, who had in the interim be appointed to the supreme authority, under the title director, proceeded upon this to offer a reward for apprehension as a deserter; but this had no otl effect than to exasperate the rebel general into a c claration of independence. The people of Buen Ayres now became alarmed at the prospect of civil war; and as Artigas grew powerful and da gerous, they began to blame the government for t hostile measures which it had taken against him. revolution took place. Alvear, who had succeeded the directorship on the resignation of Posadas, w compelled to fly, and a series of humiliating but u successful negotiations was entered into with Artig by the new government, in the hope of bringing ab a reconciliation. Monte Video was at this time the hands of Artigas; he had taken possession of in his title of 'Chief of the Orientals,' on the wi drawment of the Buenos Ayres troops: the city Santa Fe and the Entre Rios, of which he claim the protectorship, had also submitted to him. Su

was the state of things at the Portuguese invasion. General Lecor, in answer to the remonstrances of the Buenos Ayres government, stated that he had no hostile intentions against *their* territories, but alleged, that the country he had invaded, had declared itself independent. Artigas, being unable to stand his ground against the Portuguese, without the aid of Buenos Ayres, Monte Video, and other principal places, submitted to the invading army with scarcely a show of opposition; many of the inhabitants, as well as the regiment of Libertos, having previously joined the standard of the United Provinces."

The marching of the Portuguese divisions, amounting altogether to ten thousand men, through the country, was destructive to the settlements and villages of the interior; but the occupation of the city by general Lecor with the principal division, consisting of five thousand men, gave the finishing blow to its prosperity. "Within eight years," says an eye-witness of the devastation that had been produced, "the population has been reduced at least two-thirds, many of the principal inhabitants have removed, property to an immense amount in the delightful suburbs, which contained a greater population than the town, has been destroyed, and the value of what remains, reduced to a mere trifle. It is, in fact, nothing but a garrison, with a few starved inhabitants, who are vexed and harassed by the military. I am told, that, notwithstanding this misery, there is a theatre here, and that the evenings are spent in balls and dances, perhaps for want of other employments; the outward actions are not always the certain index of the heart. When we consider the stagnation of business, the depreciation of property, and the deficiency of supplies, we may easily conjecture what must be the condition of the people. There is little doubt, that had this place remained attached to the

government of Buenos Ayres, the Portuguese would not have molested it; but the revolt of Artigas and his disorganising system, furnished too fair an opportunity for making themselves masters of a territory they had coveted for more than a century and a half.

"The town still retains proof of having once been flourishing. The streets are laid off at right angles, and are much more spacious than those of Rio, as well as less filthy, although little or no attention is paid to them: the buildings also are, in general, erected in better taste. The streets are paved, but the footways are narrow and indifferent.

"The next morning, we sallied forth at one of the gates, to take a view of the country outside the walls and within the Portuguese lines, which extend around about three miles. It was not then deemed safe to go beyond them, lest we should fall in with the *gauchos*, the people of Artigas. We soon found ourselves in the midst of ruins, whose aspect was much more melancholy than those of the city itself. Nearly the whole extent which I have mentioned, was once covered with delightful dwellings, and contiguous gardens, in the highest cultivation; it is now a scene of desolation. The ground scarcely exhibits traces of the spots where they stood, or of the gardens, excepting, here and there, fragments of the hedges of the prickly pear, with which they had formerly been enclosed. The fruit-trees, and those planted for ornament, had been cut down for fuel, or perhaps through wantonness. Over the surface of this extensive and fertile plain, which a few years ago contained as great a population as the city itself, there are, at present, not more than a dozen families, upon whom soldiers are billeted, and a few uninhabited dilapidated buildings. This is the result of the unhappy sieges which have reduced the population of this city and its suburbs, from upwards of thirty thousand to little more than seven. From this, some idea may be

formed of the havoc which has been made. We found, however, in riding along the basin above the town, a fine garden, which had escaped the common wreck. We alighted, and were hospitably received by the owner, who led us through his grounds, and showed us his fruit-trees, and vegetables. It is from this spot that Lecor's table is supplied. The fruits, peaches, grapes, figs, oranges, apples, &c. are exceedingly fine. In this enchanting climate, (with the exception of a few of the tropical fruits,) all the fruits that are most esteemed ripen in the open air, in great perfection. In fact, I believe that the climate is surpassed by none in the world, not even by that of Italy or the south of France. It experiences neither the sultry heat of summer, nor the chilling blast of winter. The air is so pure, that putrefaction can scarcely be said to take place; we observed the remains of several dead animals, which seemed to have dried up, instead of going to decay. Flesh wounds are said to heal with difficulty from the same cause."*

"The commerce of the *Banda Oriental*," adds this gentleman, "may almost be said to be at an end, the Portuguese having possession of all the ports where it was carried on, on that side of the Plata." How far Monte Video has recovered any portion of its trade, since the consolidation of the Brazilian empire, we are not informed. Its harbour is so much superior to that of Buenos Ayres,—it is pronounced to be indeed the only one on the river that deserves the name,—that this circumstance will always render it an important station. At the same time, in Buenos Ayres and St Pedro, it will always have two powerful rivals.

The road from Monte Video to Colonia, or Santo Sacramento, passes near the coast, through an undu-

* Brackenridge's Voyage to South America, in 1817, 18. vol. i. pp. 186—9.

ing country, cut by a few unimportant streams. No place of any note intervenes, except Santa Luzia, on the river of the same name, where there is a port for small craft. The town of Colonia, so often referred to, contained, in 1809, only about fifty inconsiderable houses, pleasantly situated, and neat in their appearance, the inhabitants chiefly Spanish families. "The port," says Mr Luccock, "is a valuable one, but remained unimproved in consequence of the jealousy with which it is regarded by Buenos Ayres," —to which at this period it belonged, and a passage boat sailed from one port to the other almost daily. In front of the town lies the isle of St Gabriel, stated by Henderson to be "450 fathoms long," and two smaller islands. From Colonia, several roads branch off into the interior. All these places were within the *diocese* of Buenos Ayres. They have probably, ere this, been transferred to a Brazilian diocesan.—Crossing the mouth of the Uruguay, which joins the Plata about ten leagues to the north-west of Colonia, we enter the province of

PARANA.

This newly-acquired territory, respecting which little is certainly known, has sometimes been called the province of *Entre Rios*, as lying between the three large rivers of the Uruguay on the east, the Paraguay on the south and west, and the Parana, which intersects it, and divides it into two unequal parts, northern and southern.* On the north, it borders on

* Mr Luccock contends, that the river which has the largest expanse of water should be called the *Parana* (a term always denoting a large body of water, and applied to the ocean itself), and that Paraguay should be the name of the tributary stream, *guay* signifying a creek or bay. Etymology, however, is a poor guide in such matters, especially in a coun-

the province of Matto Grosso. Its extent, according to Cazal, is 650 miles in length from north to south, and 250 in breadth at its widest part: it is altogether within the temperate zone, lying between 24°, and 33° 30′ S. latitude.

Of the interior of this province, we have only very meagre and unsatisfactory accounts. Mr Luccock describes the three provinces of Parana, Uruguay, and Rio Grande, generally, as the lowlands of southern Brazil. The Parana, before it touches this district, has become a mighty stream, having drained an immense tract of country. Arrived at the verge of the great table-land which forms the inner part of Brazil, it tumbles over a precipitous, rocky channel, at a place called *Setequedas*, or Seven Falls. "Some have spoken," says Mr Luccock, "of a continued rapid and broken advance of the river for several leagues; but Cazal represents it as here narrowed from a league in breadth to a hundred yards, by six small rocky islands, between which the water rushes and falls. I suspect that the breadth which he mentions is not that of the whole stream, but of each of the seven channels. About the same parallel of latitude, and formed by the same mountainous ridge, is a smaller cataract on the Paraguay called the *Estreito*, or Narrows, where the stream has worn itself a channel, with lofty, perpendicular sides, through which it flows as through a narrow street."

Among the numerous minor streams of the province are the Acarahy, or River of Cranes, which joins the Paraguay nearly opposite to the south-west

try where we have so many little Rio Grande's, and so immense a 'little lake.' We have followed Mr Henderson, or rather Cazal, in considering the immense stream which traverses the heart of the country longitudinally, as bearing the name of Paraguay, both above and below its confluence with the Parana at Corrientes.

point of the province of St Paulo;* the Tibiquary, which, according to Cazal, falls into the Paraguay, ninety miles above its confluence with the Parana; the Cannabe, which, after a course of a hundred miles, enters the Paraguay, fifty miles to the north of the Tibiquary; the Galaguay, the Mirinay, and the Tacoary (Hole in the Rock), which fall into the Uruguay; and Cazal adds, the Jaguary (Water of Ounces), which, rising in the Serra Maracaju, runs into the Parana twelve miles below the Setequedas; but, Mr Luccock thinks, that it is erroneously placed among the rivers of this province.

"The Parana and the Paraguay," continues this intelligent traveller, "rolling impetuously through a very extended course, bring down a great quantity of wreck, and soil of a reddish colour. When they have arrived at the more level grounds, and their currents are become comparatively slow, much of it is deposited; there it remains until the next wet season, when it is again urged onward by a resistless torrent, which not only sweeps the bottom, but frets and tears the banks which had been before raised. The Uruguay, a humbler stream, passes over a stony bed, but, before its union with the Plata, has formed its own peculiar estuary. In the course of ages, these rivers have produced some of the most extensive alluvial plains which now exist upon the face of the globe. The more solid parts of the country yield limestone, gypsum, marble, granites, and their accompanying spars. In general, the soil is rich, though in some places sandy, in others moist and clayey. It is in many parts covered with majestic woods, affording valuable timber; and produces rich gums, fruits of admirable flavour, and various medicinal and officinal herbs. Among the latter is the *matté*, an article pe-

* Mr Henderson says, seventy miles below the *Setequedas*, being the first considerable river that enters the Parana by the *right* bank.

[illegible] Boiea. In the [illegible] collected leaves are laid in [illegible] and placed between two [illegible] dried. They are then [illegible] more yellow, form a substance [illegible] is called the dust of tea. [illegible] packed in hides, or in sacks [illegible] or cane, opened and made fit [illegible] use, it is infused in water, [illegible] cocoa-nut shell, variously ornamented [illegible] into cups, but sucked through a [illegible] strainer at the lower end, to prevent [illegible] entering the tube. In taking it, the [illegible] monly passed round to a whole company [illegible] ever disgust may arise from the sight of [illegible] mouths receiving the pipe in their turn [illegible] deemed the height of ill-breeding to decline [illegible] of the *matté*."*

* This is doubtless the same production that has been taken for the tea-plant, which is alluded to by Mr Hodges and is called by Mrs Graham, wild tea. Mr Hodges [illegible]

This traveller estimates the whole of the territory which Brazil had recently acquired, by the annexation of this province and the reductions to the empire, at not less than 70,000 miles,—"possessing from nature all the wealth, comforts, and beauties which a fine climate, fertile soil, and plenteous streams can bestow. It comprehends nearly the whole of the districts first civilised by the Jesuits. It is a level rather than a mountainous country, although there are in it some considerable ridges, and almost every part of it is sufficiently undulated to be dry and healthy. There are, indeed, portions of swampy ground near the great rivers; but these, if ever stocked with inhabitants, will form meadows of the richest description."

This part of the country was first discovered by Sebastian Cabot and Diego Garcia, on advancing up the Paraguay in 1526; but, for many years after its discovery, it remained almost unnoticed. At length, the Jesuits succeeded in extending their beneficent dominion into the eastern and middle parts of the province, by the civilisation of the Guarani hordes who inhabited it. In 1630, they had already founded no fewer than twenty large villages of Indians, called reductions (*reduçoes*), containing 70,000 inhabitants, when those who had advanced to the Upper Parana, with the intention of extending the "spiritual conquest," were compelled by the Paulistas to fall back to the south of the Serra Maracaju. The Jesuit Montoya relates that, on this predatory invasion of the Upper Parana by the

cribes it as a large shrub, with leaves resembling those of the orange-tree, and it "tastes of mallows." The use of the beverage is stated to have prevailed from time immemorial among the Indians of the northern part of the province, and by them was introduced among the first inhabitants of Assumption.

Paulista forces, consisting of not less than 8000 men, he and his colleagues retired, with 2000 Indians, below the Setequedas; but they were not long in security even here, for, in 1637, 140 Paulistas, at the head of 1500 Indians, attacked the reductions of Jesu Maria, St Christovam, and St Anna, in the Lower Parana, and carried off 7000 prisoners. The Jesuits next reduced the Tappes, whose lands lay further eastward; and, continuing to civilise these two tribes, they formed the celebrated Guaranitic empire, which is stated to have contained more than 200,000 inhabitants, and to have been able to send into the field an army of 40,000 men. In the *Entre Rios*, they are said to have established a powerful republic, comprising thirty-one large villages, inhabited by 100,000 souls. The state of these reductions, or missions, at the period of the expulsion of the Jesuits, in 1768, is thus described by Cazal.

"Each of the *reduçoes*, otherwise called missions, was a considerable town, laid out with straight streets. The houses, generally of earth, were whitened, covered with tiles, and had varandas on each side, in order to preserve them from the sun and rain. On seeing one, a correct idea might be formed of the whole. Each mission had only a mother church, generally of stone, magnificent and richly ornamented, some being entirely gilded. A vicar and a curate, both Jesuits, were the only ecclesiastics exercising the parochial functions, being, at the same time, inspectors of all civil economy; under whose direction there were magistrates (*corregidores*), elected annually; a *cacique*, or chief, elected for life; and other officers, each with his jurisdiction. With the exception of these, every individual, of both sexes, wore a shirt reaching to the ancles, usually of white cotton. They cultivated *matte*, the cotton-tree, and such provisions as

prospered best in the country. The whole was deposited in warehouses, from whence it was distributed daily to the people. Each family received an ounce of *matté*, four pounds of meat, and a certain measure of Indian corn, and more if it was judged necessary. All passed under the review of the magistrates, or of other subordinate persons. The curates lived commodiously, near to their churches; and contiguous to their dwellings were two spacious houses; one destined for schools of reading, painting, architecture, music, and having shops for different manual occupations; the other was a *recolhimento*, or receptacle for a great number of young girls, who were engaged in different works, under the inspection of matronly women, already instructed. The women received on Monday a certain portion of cotton, which they were to return in the spun state on Saturday. The curate, accompanied by certain officers and masters, went daily, at eight o'clock, to visit the schools and shops. The signal of the last Ave-Marias was also that of the *rosario*, or counting of beads, at which all assisted.—All superfluities were exported, with a large quantity of tallow, hides, and *matté;* and with the proceeds they paid the capitation-tax, and obtained in return European commodities. It is calculated, that the Indians possessed nearly two million head of cattle." *

The principal towns in the province are, Assumption, Corrientes, Parana or Santa Fé, Coruguaty, and Villa Rica.

Assumption (*Assumpçâo*), the capital of the province and the residence of the governor, is the largest place in Parana. It is situated on the margin of the Paraguay, which daily washes away, we are told, a part of the ground on which it is built. The

* Henderson's History, pp. 136, 137.

city is built with no regularity, nor has it any handsome edifices. The greater part of the houses are of earth. There are, besides the Jesuits' college, which is now a seminary, convents belonging to the Dominicans, the Franciscans, and the Mercenarians,* to whose joint ghostly direction the missions were consigned on the expulsion of the Jesuits, another of *Recoletos*,† and an hospital. The bishop was a suffragan of La Plata. Though on the borders of a large river, and surrounded by a fertile and populous country, it is not, Mr Luccock thinks, well situated for trade, producing no commodities for exportation, but such as can be bought on better terms at Buenos Ayres, having little demand for European manufactures, and possessing no circulating medium. The exports consist chiefly of *mattė*, a little tobacco, *imbé* (a thread made of the fibres of the aloe), and wood, both in billets and planks. There are some plantations of cotton, and the sugar-cane is also cultivated; also maize, and a root called *aipim*, *aipyi*, or *pompim*, which serves as a substitute for bread. Honey and wax are stated by Cazal to be also abundant, and large herds are bred in the environs. None of these articles, however, are adapted to a European market, except such as are furnished in larger quantities and better quality by nearer ports. "When this part of the American continent was ceded to the Brazilian crown, some sanguine people," says Mr Luccock, "imagined that, should the Plata ever be shut against British shipping, (a circumstance not very likely to occur), commerce might be carried on to Assumption through St Catharine's or St

* An order of friars instituted in Arragon by King James for the redemption of captives.

† Reformed friars, called also friars minors of St Francis; they are rigid disciplinarians.

Paul's. But, if the encouragements to trade thither should increase, it appears to mē, that establishments at Colonia would answer more effectually; for that place must command the commerce of the Parana (Paraguay) and the rivers flowing into it, as soon as the country shall be quietly settled under its new masters."

Correntes is a smaller place than Assumption, but its superior situation, this traveller thinks, though the neighbourhood produces neither wheat nor *matté*, will probably enable it to outstrip its rival, when the river is better known to Europeans. It is situated "in the southern angle" of the confluence of the Parana with the Paraguay. The vicinity is marshy, and there are extensive woods, one consequence of which is, that the mosquitoes are peculiarly troublesome; locusts and ants are also very numerous, and destroy the mandioc plantations. Hides and timber are the chief exports. The inhabitants consist of "some Portuguese, many Indians, and a few negroes." Here, too, each of the three orders above referred to has a convent; the Jesuits' college is in ruins.

Ten leagues to the north of Correntes, is the parish of Nehembuçu, on the Paraguay, where shipbuilding on a small scale is carried on, the neighbourhood affording excellent timber; but all the iron-work is sent up ready formed, there being no artisans on the spot competent to execute it. Mr Luccock saw a well-constructed vessel of 400 tons, which had been built here.

Coruguaty and Villa Rica are the great marts for *matté*. The former is about thirty leagues north-east of Assumption, and three miles from the left margin of the river from which it takes its name: the latter is twenty leagues south-east of the metropolitan town. Santa Luzia, seated on the Paraguay, thirty leagues to the south of Correntes, and

Little Santa Fé, commonly called Parana, situated on the Paraguay in front of St Fé, export large quantities of lime, gypsum, and plaster of Paris; a considerable part of the materials being drawn from hence, with which the houses of Monte Video and Buenos Ayres are white-washed. The only other towns are, *Itaty*, about thirty leagues above Correntes, described by Cazal as small, but regularly built, and well situated, inhabited chiefly by Indians, with a few Whites; the neighbourhood furnishes cotton, oranges, and water-melons; *Arroio da China*, situated on the Uruguay, thirty leagues above its embouchure, inhabited chiefly by Whites, who export cattle, wheat, and fruit; and *Corpus*, seated on the Parana, the most northerly of the missions, and "perhaps the pleasantest civilised station in the province."*

The two immense lakes into which the Paraguay expands,—that of Ibera or Ybyra, otherwise called Caracares, and that of Xarays, which lies to the north of the confluence of the rivers,—have already been referred to in the general survey of the country.† About sixty miles above the town of Itaty, in

* Cazal has given a list of twenty-three other places in the country of the Missions, founded by the Jesuits. The chief of these were *Candellaria*, the capital of the Guarani kingdom, situated on the left bank of the Parana; *St Ignacio Guassu*, the most ancient of all the settlements, near the head of a branch of the Tibiquary; and *Yapegu*, where the Jesuits had a college richly ornamented, seated a little below the confluence of the Ibicuy with the Uruguay, and one of the largest among the missions. This last was the most southern, as Corpus was the most northern settlement. Of the present state of these places, nothing appears to be known: they have probably fallen into decay since the fall of the Jesuits, and it would answer no purpose to transcribe the meagre list of names.

† See page 86.

the midst of the woods, is another large lake, called Jagape: but little more is known of it than the name. In fact, no modern traveller has yet explored these savage regions, the central valley through which the Paraguay has for nearly six thousand years rolled on his mighty waters, unvexed by the intrusion of civilised man.

We have little more information respecting the

PROVINCE OF URUGUAY,

Formed of the seven Spanish reductions on the eastern bank of that river, which were ceded to Portugal by the treaty of limits in 1750.* After their annexation to Brazil, they constituted a part of the captaincy of Rio Grande; but recently, a governor has been appointed for the province. The Uruguay divides it from that of Parana on the west, and from St Paulo on the north; while, on the east and the south, it is bounded by the summits of the Serra which divides it from Rio Grande.† The great river which gives name to the province, rises near the coast, opposite to the Isle of Sta Catherina, and runs westward, under the name of Pellotas, draining a vast extent of country: then, changing its course to the south-west and south, it assumes the name of Uruguay or the Red River. From its confluence with the Plata, it is navigable by launches for 200 miles, and by canoes for twice that distance; but its channel is generally rocky, its current rapid, and the upper part of the river has many falls. Among its tributaries are the *Hyjuhy*, which originating at the base of the mountain of St Martinho, the most elevated summit of the great Cochilha, traverses the province from east to

* See pp. 48, 56.

† Mr Luccock erroneously makes the province extend southward to the Plata.

west, and discharges itself in front of Assumption, a few leagues to the north of St Nicolau; and the *Ibicuy*, a large navigable river, but little known, which, running in a north-westerly direction for about a hundred miles, receives the Caziguay from the eastward, and the Toropy from the north-east, the latter bringing with it the waters of the Ibicuy-mirim: from this junction, called *Forquilha*, or the Forks, it stretches away to the westward, receives the Jaguary, (or Jaquary,) a "winding, placid river, with much wood on its banks," and, twenty leagues below, the Hibipitu, soon after which it discharges itself into the Uruguay.*

The *reductions* in Uruguay were founded by the Spanish Jesuits, in the beginning of the seventeenth century, in order to civilise and convert to Christianity the native possessors of the country, by means similar to those that had been successfully practised in Parana. The country was then inhabited by various hordes of Tappes, a branch of the Guaranis; a people less vicious, and more disposed to receive instruction, than any other of the South American tribes. They lived divided into various villages, of which the most populous bore the name of the nation. It is not known what was the number of these; but the Jesuits reduced them to seven, which were hence denominated *reduções*, or reductions. The names of these se-

* Mr Luccock reckons the Rio Negro among the rivers of this province, owing to his error respecting its southern boundary. It is, in fact, a river of Rio Grande do Sul, and falls into the Uruguay, in about lat 33° 25′ south. At the confluence of these rivers stands the town of St Domingos Suriano, "a small place, but important as a port:" its exports consist of wheat, pulse, hides, tallow, fire-wood, lime, and stone. This river, the course of which is estimated at 300 miles, affords a useful communication with the interior, and was much frequented by the Portuguese traders when driven from Colonia.

ven celebrated missions, and their population in 1801, the period when they were conquered by the Portuguese, are given by Cazal as follows:—

	Inhabitants.
St Francisco de Borja, ...	1,300
St Miguel, ...	1,900
St Joam	1,600
St Angelo, ...	1,960
St Nicolau, ...	3,940
St Lourenco, ...	960
St Luiz, ...	2,350

"The whole of these," we are told, "were, and yet are, upon the same plan. The houses are of earth, with straight streets, and varandas on the sides, which protect them against the rain and heat. Many of the Indians understand the Spanish and Portuguese, and express themselves tolerably well in both languages. They exercise almost all the requisite manual occupations and various mechanical arts with intelligence; they likewise manufacture coarse woollens and cottons. *Matté* is the only article of exportation. In each mission, when governed by the Jesuits, there was a school for reading, writing, and speaking the Spanish language, established by royal order."*

St Miguel, the most easterly of the reductions, is considered, Cazal says, as the present capital of the province. It is situated nearly in the heart of the province, about twenty-five leagues distant from the Uruguay, and thirty leagues east-north-east of St Borja, the most southern reduction, which is situated about five leagues north of the confluence of the Ibicuy with the Uruguay. St Micolau was the former capital, and appears to be more advantageously placed,

* Henderson's Brazil, p. 150.

being near the banks of the Uruguay, and having a small stream, which falls into the Paratini. It is the furthest towards the north-west, and is about twenty-five leagues distant from St Miguel.

That part of the province which extends to the southward of the Ibicuy, and, indeed, the whole of the adjacent province of Rio Grande, as far south as the Rio Negro, may be considered as almost *terra incognita*. Some trade has been carried on by means of the latter river, on the banks of which Artigas had his head-quarters; but the country is still, for the most part, in the possession of the Indians. They are chiefly the descendants of the Charrua tribe, who inhabited the country from Maldonado to the Uruguny, and the conquest of whom is stated by Azara to have cost the Spaniards more bloodshed, than their wars with the Incas and with Montezuma. At the close of the seventeenth century, this once numerous clan was reduced to about four hundred men. These are the Indians referred to, as being devoted to Artigas. To the north of the Charrua tribes, reside the Minuâno Indians; they occupy the lands south of the river Ibicuy, and westward of the Tappes of Lake Patos. Between this tribe and the Charruas, there is said to exist perpetual enmity. Their territory is watered by the Igarupay. Further northward, in the plains watered by the Pellotas, reside the Guaycanans.

To these four nations or clans, viz. the Charruas, the Minuânoes, the Tappes, and the Guaycanans, Cazal adds the Patos. Of these, he says, there is no account, and they appear to be extinct, having most probably become intermixed with other tribes. The absence of all distinct record respecting this supposed tribe, renders it doubtful whether it ever had an existence. If the Lagoa dos Patos taken its name from the water-fowl by which it is frequented, as Mr Luccock states, it is probable that the Indians in that

neighbourhood were named by the early settlers from the lake. The *Ilha dos Patos* (St Catharina) possibly derived its name from the same bird; and the supposition that the lake and the island were named from the aborigines, may have led to the idea that there was a tribe of Indians so called.

We have now completed the survey of the provinces South of Rio, so far as the imperfect state of our information with regard to a large portion of this fine territory admits of. It is reserved for future travellers to explore the banks of the three mighty rivers which afford the only means, at present practicable, of penetrating into the interior. The plains of the Uruguay (compared by an American traveller to the Mississippi territory, although the river itself bears a nearer resemblance to the Ohio,) will, probably, first receive the civilising influence of commerce, which is gradually extending itself in all directions from the ports of the eastern and southern coast. In two ways will commerce tend to promote civilisation; by introducing those artificial wants which stimulate industry, and by draining the country of its innumerable herds of wild cattle, which afford the means of subsistence to a thinly scattered, rude, and indolent population, precluding all attention to husbandry and every other species of improvement. With the decrease of these herds, the natives will either retire, or be compelled to cultivate the soil. In fact, the conquest of the country, it has been remarked, would be sooner effected by destroying the herds, than by making war upon the natives. "The pastoral life," observes Mr Southey, "is necessarily unfavourable to civilisation; but no where has it been found so completely to debase and brutalise man as in the grazing countries of South America." The reason is obvious: the herdsman here partakes less of the shepherd than of the hunter; and the wandering habits of pastoral tribes, who nevertheless generally move in companies, and

have some kind of social compact, are less incompatible with a considerable degree of civilisation, than the solitary life and fierce habits of the *gaucho* or backwoodsman. Those who "have not patience to wait while their bread is growing," will always be found a desperate, treacherous, and cruel race. The introduction of agriculture, therefore, is the first step, and a most important one, in civilisation. The change which it superinduces in the domestic habits, the new ideas to which it gives birth respecting property, and the consequent necessity of some kind of government for mutual security, the pacific policy which it becomes the interest of the community to adopt, and the exchange which is made by the husbandman of the rifle for the hoe and the millstone, of the spear for the pruning-hook,—all these attendant circumstances, together with the local attachments which are eventually created, give to Agriculture the character of a beneficent invention, worthy of being attributed by the heathen to their gods. Under the reign of Ceres and of Bacchus, the face of nature is first taught to smile. The Indians, who never heard of those old classic deities, have a legend of their own, which has a similar meaning, ascribing to their Paye Tzome, who taught them the use of the Mandioc, the character of a divine benefactor.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.